

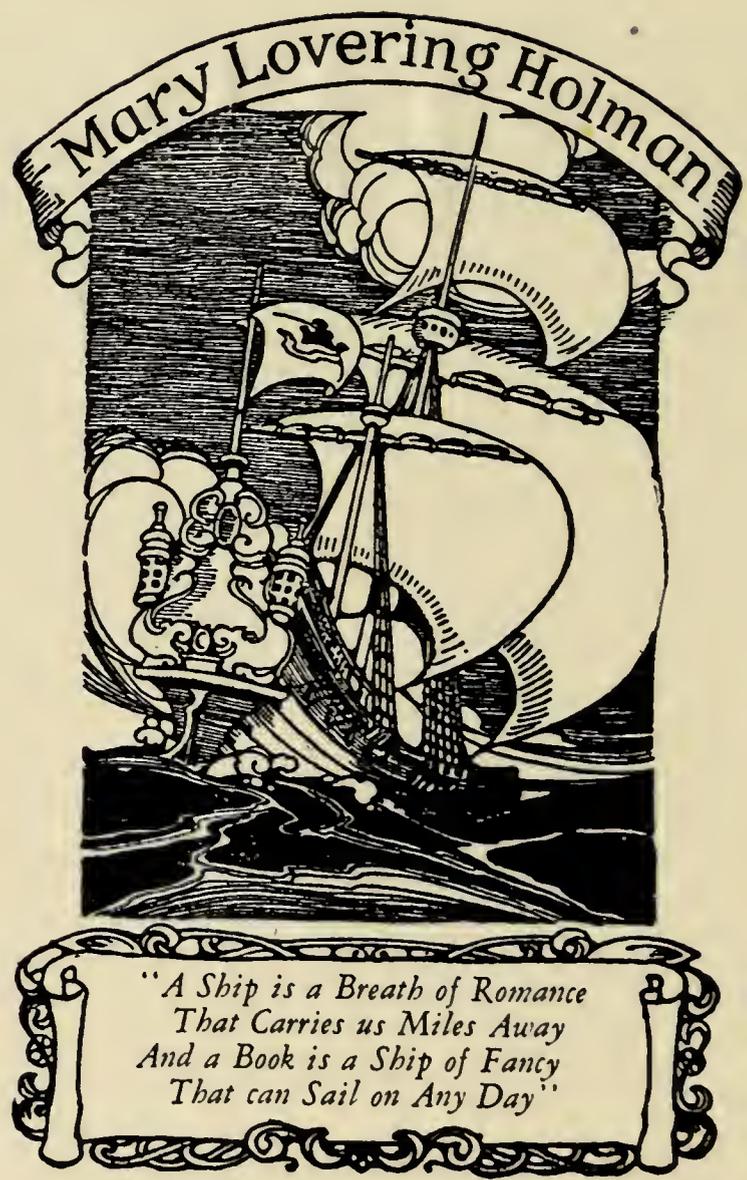


Gc  
929.2  
An86f  
1176019

M.

act  
12-

GENEALOGY COLLECTION



ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY

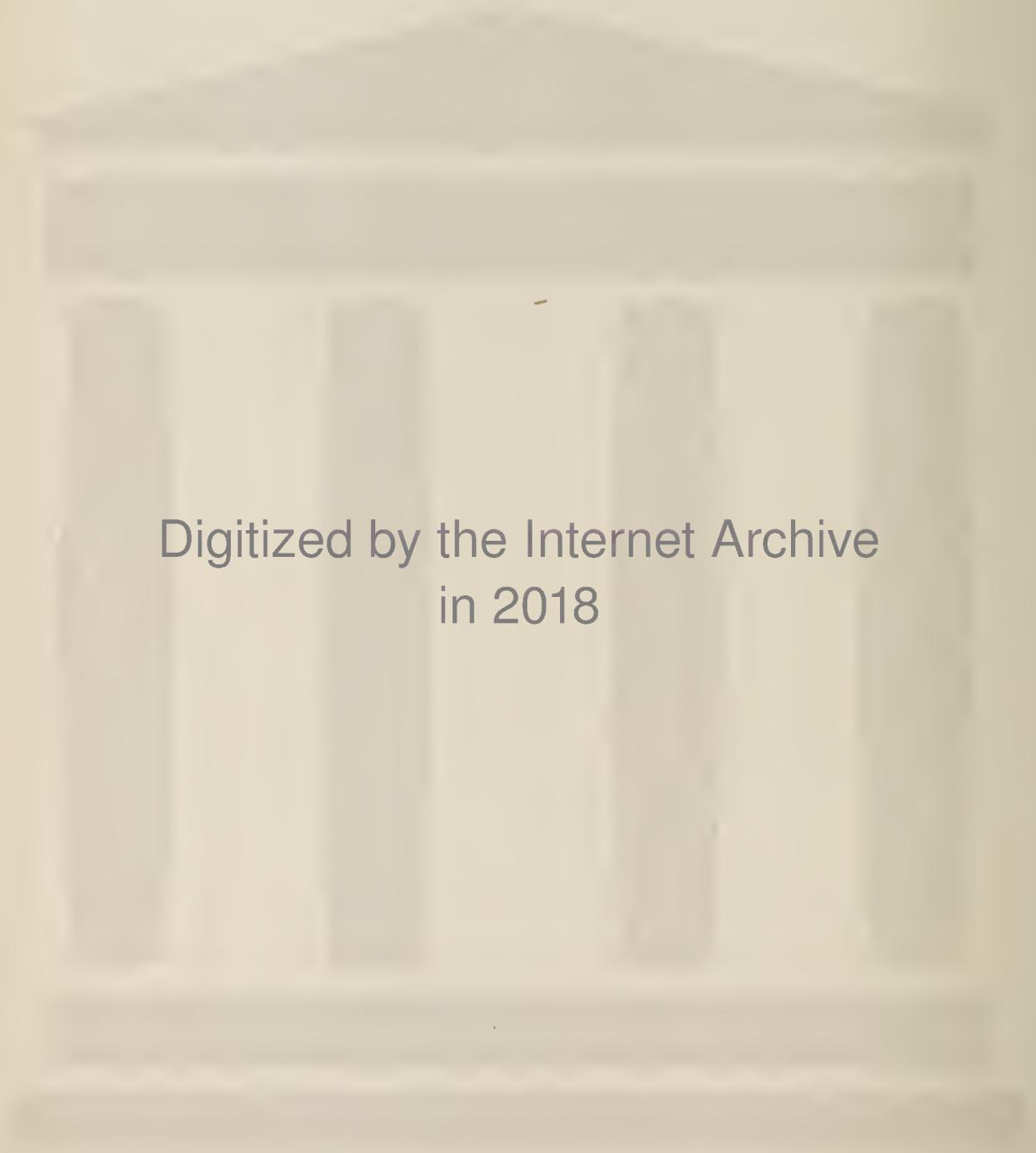


3 1833 07377 7200

Mary Loring Hoban  
from

Stuyvesant High

May 1930



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2018

<https://archive.org/details/anthongenealogyb00fish>

1176019







---

---

ANTHON GENEALOGY.

---

---

by

Stuyvesant Fish



#12.00  
Goodspeed  
The information collected in this book has been gathered from various well-known Genealogies. For the most part it has been taken verbatim.

The arrangement of the data with regard to individuals has been made uniform in all cases for convenience of the reader.

A moderate amount of individual work has been done, criticism or correction of which would be greatly appreciated. By far the hardest and most uninteresting part of the work was done by my good friend Mr. Chas. H. Wenman. Without his labor in proofreading and indexing, the book would be of very little value to the reader.

STUYVESANT FISH.

New York, N. Y.

February 20, 1930.



## ANTHON AND ALLIED FAMILIES.

Anthon	Le Mere, or La Maire
Attwood	Lumpkin
Bangs	Madock
Baudry	Mayo
Blagge	Meert
Bompers	Miller
Boonen	Montenack
Boucher	Obbe, Obe or Obee
Brewster	Piaud
Burdet or Bourdet	Prence
Carpenter	Remick, or Remich
Claes	Robbin
Collier	Rollet
Couillard	St. Martin (Des Buttes, Boutet)
Crowe or Crowell	Sears or Sares
Dally	Soulage
Doyon	Soulard
Dow	Southworth
Dunham	Stevens
Dunster	Stoutenburgh
Edsall	Tapp
Edmund Freeman	Treat
Samuel Freeman	Uyten Bogert
Gagnon	Van Gelder
Gaylard, Gaylaud, or Gaylord	Van Tienhoven
Graves	Vickers, or Vrickers
Guyon	Wessels
Hébert	Will
Hone	Willard
Jadot (Jadeau)	Wood
Klotz (Klotzen)	



## ANTHON FAMILY.

GEORGE CHRISTIAN ANTHON was born Aug. 25, 1734. His father was John Michael Anthon, Rathsmester of Saxe Meiningen; his mother was Dorothea Rosina Louisa Cramer, daughter of John Theophilus Cramer, Pastor of Unterella. George Christian Anthon's father and mother were married Oct. 23, 1731. His father, John Michael Anthon, died in 1738 at the age of 39. His widow married second John Gottlieb Baumhart, a surgeon of Salzungen. It was, therefore, quite natural that George Christian Anthon studied medicine first at Salzungen and afterwards at Gerstungen. In 1750 he passed an examination before the medical authorities at Eisenach.

In 1754, after passing a second examination at Amsterdam before the College of Surgeons, he became a ship's surgeon in the Dutch West India trade. He made one trip safely in the *Vrouw Anna* to Surinam. Dr. Anthon's certificate as sea surgeon finds him fit to be surgeon of a merchant ship. On June 15, 1756, his medicines and instruments are certified to be in order for the trip to Surinam June 19, 1756, and again for a second trip to Curacao Oct. 13, 1757. On his second trip the *Vrouw Anna* was captured near Port au Prince by a British Privateer from New York and carried into that port and condemned.

At the age of 23, George Christian Anthon was friendless in a strange country, with nothing to fall back upon but his profession. Doctors were scarce in the Colony, so he had no difficulty in getting the position of Assistant Surgeon (Surgeon's Mate) in the General Military Hospital at Albany in 1758. Later he became Surgeon of the First Battalion of the 60th Regiment, Royal Americans (Parkman's Conspiracy of Pontiac, page 354, gives an account of the regiment). His commission is dated Albany, June 25, 1761, and signed by Sir Jeffrey Amherst. The commission appoints him Surgeon's Mate of His Majesty's Hospital in North America, stationed at Detroit. He stayed there until 1764, during which time he was probably the only English or French doctor in all the territory west of Albany. While at Detroit, during the siege of Pontiac, the Doctor, wishing to have a look at the enemy, climbed up a pear tree which grew outside the fort.

The Indians discovered him and began taking pot shots at him. Gladwin, the commander of the fort, unwilling to lose his medicine man, made a sortie and rescued the Doctor.

While at Detroit he was the surgeon and physician of the garrison, the Indians and the inhabitants. A pay voucher of Geo. Croghan, Deputy Superintendent of Indian Affairs, dated Oct. 4, 1763, proves his services to the Indians. The only commission of record in the Army is that of Surgeon's Mate to the General Hospital, as before mentioned. However, in 1765, Dr. Anthon received a commission from Sir Wm. Johnson as surgeon to the Indians. About this time he went on an expedition into the Illinois country, during which he was captured by the Indians below or near the mouth of the Wabash. For three months he was a prisoner and suffered much until he was ransomed by Col. Croghan. In 1767 he went to New York for a short trip, returning to Detroit and stayed there until the end of the Revolution.

Detroit was an interesting place during the Revolution. Troops were coming and going. Burgoyne's army was on its way to New York. Indians and troops were being mustered there on their way to attack Albany and Fort Stanwick. The Doctor bought a cask of Madeira wine at 40 shillings the gallon, probably to entertain the officers of the garrison, as the Doctor drank little himself.

The Doctor married twice, first a lady of the Navarre family, and second her niece by marriage, a Jadot. The first marriage took place Aug. 13, 1770, at Detroit. On that date Mariana Navarre was married to Dr. Anthon by Chaplain Turring of the 53rd Regiment. She was the daughter of Robert Navarre, who came to America in 1682, landing in Quebec. She was born at Detroit, Oct. 14, 1737, and died Oct. 8, 1773, leaving no children by this marriage. At the time of her marriage to Dr. Anthon she was the widow of Jacques St. Martin. St. Martin's sister, Marguerite St. Martin was married to Louis Jadot. Both died, leaving an only daughter, Genevieve Jadot, who was adopted by Mariana (Navarre) St. Martin, who by her first marriage had a son called Anthony St. Martin, who died young, and two daughters, Archange, who married Angus Mackintosh Earl of Moy, and Finon who married Mr. Fry. When his first wife died, the Doctor had quite a large family of step-children as wards, three of his wife's children by her first marriage and her niece, Genevieve Jadot. The latter was then about 10 years old. The other

children were about the same age. In 1778, on July 18, Dr. Anthon married his ward, Genevieve Jadot. The marriage was performed by Governor Hamilton; she was about 15 years old (born May 20, 1763) and the Doctor 44. Family tradition says that at the time of her marriage she still played with dolls and the Doctor gave her one as a wedding present; also that the marriage took place because Pontiac wanted to marry Genevieve.

After the close of the Revolution, but before the surrender of Detroit to the United States, the Doctor moved to New York in 1786. He debated about buying a farm in New Rochelle or a house in New York City. First he rented a house on Wall Street at the "extravagant" rent of \$125 and taxes a year. The rent being too high, he moved to Dey Street where he got a house for about half that sum. The place he thought of buying was in New Rochelle. Exactly where it was, with its good house and out buildings, would be interesting to know. From Dey Street he moved to 6 Broad Street in 1790-93, the site of the New York Stock Exchange. Later he moved to where the old Mills Building used to stand and the Equitable Trust Building now stands. It might shock the Doctor to know that one of his great-grandchildren is paying \$26,000 a year rent for a part of a floor in the same building that he once rented for probably about \$150 and taxes.

Charles Anthon, in his account of the family, says that the Doctor looked like Martin Luther. The picture I have of him is that of an old man of strong character. The eyes in the picture are very remarkable. The only eyes like them, which I have seen, were those of J. P. Morgan, Sr. The picture is in water colors and painted by Martin.

The fact that Dr. Anthon soon had a good practice in New York and was well liked is remarkable and speaks much for his professional skill, ability and tact, as after the Revolution, ex-officers of the English Army were not generally well received. During the yellow fever epidemics from 1795 to 1805, the Doctor rendered good service, staying at his post when others got panic-stricken. He always claimed that the disease was not contagious but was caused by the miasma of the evening.

Both professionally and socially he maintained an eminent position in New York. In 1802 he was elected one of the thirteen Governors of the New York Lying-in-Hospital, and from 1796 to 1815 he was one of the Trustees of Columbia College. He was

beloved and respected by all who knew him. He died Dec. 22, 1815, and his wife died April 15, 1821.

Children of George Christian Anthon and Genevieve Jadot were:

1. George, born May 24, 1781; died Jan. 1, 1865. Lt. U. S. N. Died unmarried.
2. William, born Sept. 17, 1782; died Dec. 13, 1785.
3. JOHN, born May 14, 1784; died March 5, 1863; married Judith Hone on Nov. 26, 1810.
4. Dorothea Louisa, born Jan. 28, 1786; died Aug. 14, 1787, New York.
5. Catherine, born Nov. 30, 1787; died Sept. 18, 1789, New York.
6. Jane, born May 22, 1791; died Oct. 13, 1859, New York.
7. Louisa, born May 31, 1793; died unmarried.
8. Henry, born March 11, 1795; died Jan. 5, 1861. Married in 1819 to Emilia Corre.
9. Charles, born Nov. 19, 1797; died unmarried July 29, 1867.
10. William, born Nov. 8, 1799; died Nov. 26, 1831.
11. Maria, born Nov. 9, 1801; died Aug. 24, 1803.
12. Edward, born April 23, 1805; died July 26, 1830, New York.

JOHN ANTHON, son of George Christian and Genevieve (Jadot) Anthon, was born in Detroit May 14, 1784, and died in New York in 1863. Graduated from Columbia College at the head of his class in 1801, he studied law and was admitted to practice; was one of the founders of the New York Law Institute, of which he was president at the time of his death, and was the author of many valuable legal treatises and law reports. The establishment of the Supreme Court of New York City was largely due to his efforts, and it has been said of him that he tried more cases than any other man who ever lived. During the War of 1812, he commanded a company of militia and served in defense of the city. He was also employed as Judge Advocate at this time. He was the author of "Digested Index to the Reports of the United States Courts"; "Reports of Cases at Nisi Prius in the New York Supreme Court"; "An Analytical Abridgement of Blackstone's Commentaries" with an introductory essay "On the Study of Law"; Anthon's "Law Student" and "American Precedents."

He died in New York March 5, 1863.

He married, Nov. 26, 1810, Judith Hone, the daughter of John Hone and Johanna Stoutenburgh. She died Dec. 5, 1875. He died March 5, 1863.

John Anthon and Judith Hone, his wife, had the following children:

1. George, born Dec. 12, 1811; died July 21, 1816.
2. Joanna, born Aug. 11, 1813; died March 23, 1893.
3. Caroline Graves, born Dec. 23, 1814; died Dec. 22, 1871; married Rev. Geo. H. Houghton Oct. 9, 1855.
4. Genevieve, born Dec. 25, 1816; died Aug. 3, 1865; married William Mott Callender Dec. 2, 1845.
5. John Hone, born June 13, 1818; died same day.
6. John Hone, born June 9, 1819; died Feb. 18, 1821.
7. Frederick, born Dec. 1, 1820; died Aug. 5, 1868; married Henrietta Hone Oct. 7, 1856.
8. Charles Edward, born Dec. 6, 1822; died June 7, 1883.
9. John, born July 30, 1824; died Nov. 3, 1824.
10. Philip Hone, born Oct. 6, 1825; died Oct. 22, 1861; married Theresa Hotchkiss May 3, 1860.
11. WILLIAM HENRY, born Aug. 2, 1827; died Nov. 7, 1875; married Sarah Attwood Meert Jan. 23, 1850.
12. Elizabeth Van Schaick, born July 20, 1829; died Jan. 23, 1894.
13. Edward, born March 10, 1831; died Feb. 16, 1832.
14. John Hone, born Oct. 25, 1832; died Oct. 29, 1874; married Catherine Turner Aug. 30, 1866.

WILLIAM HENRY ANTHON, son of John and Judith (Hone) Anthon, was born in New York, August 2, 1827. He studied law and was admitted to the Bar, rapidly attaining eminence in his profession. He won distinction in many important cases, among them being the Brinckley divorce case and the case of rioters accused of the burning of the quarantine buildings on Staten Island, in which he appeared for the defense. He married, January 23, 1850, Sarah Attwood Meert. In 1851 he was a member of the lower house of the State Legislature and during the Civil War, Governor E. D. Morgan called upon him to serve as Judge Advocate General. During his term of office he drew up the Draft Bill which caused the draft riots in New York. He died in New York, November 7, 1875.

William Henry Anthon and Sarah Attwood Meert (died April 13, 1911) had the following children:

1. Maria Theresa Anthon, born February 12, 1852; married William Stanhope Callender, June 29, 1886; he died Dec. 11, 1900.

2. Marian Graves Anthon, born June 8, 1853; married Stuyvesant Fish, June 1, 1876; died May 25, 1915.
3. Grace Anthon, born July 19, 1855; died Aug. 3. 1855.
4. John Anthon, born April 16, 1859; died July 14, 1892.

### ATWOOD FAMILY.

I. STEPHEN ATWOOD, founder of a family of that name in Barnstable County, Mass., was born in England, probably about 1620, and died in Eastham "the latter end of February in the year 1693/4." He married in Plymouth Colony, 16 Nov. 1644, Abigail Dunham, born in the Colony in 1623, date of death unknown, daughter of John and Abigail (Wood) Dunham.

Just when Stephen Atwood came to America is not known. It was probably after the division of cattle in Plymouth in 1627, as he is not mentioned in it. Little is known of his life but his four sons left a large posterity.

The name is spelled sometimes with one and sometimes with two "t's."

Children of Stephen Attwood and Abigail Dunham, all born in Plymouth, Mass., were:

1. STEPHEN, born about 1645; married Apphia (Bangs) Knowles.
2. John, born about 1647; died probably in 1648.
3. Hannah, born 14 Oct. 1649.
4. Daniel, born about 1651; living 1695.
5. Eldad, born about 1653; married 14 February, 1683, Anna Snow, daughter of Mark and Anna (Cook) Snow.
6. Medad, born 16 Jan. 1658-9; married Esther Cole, daughter of Daniel Cole.

II. STEPHEN ATWOOD, born in Plymouth Colony, about 1645, died there about 1722 (Will made, 1715—proved 1722). He married about 1676, Apphia (Bangs) Knowles, born in Plymouth Colony, 15 Oct. 1651, died after 1722, daughter of Edward and Rebecca Bangs, and widow of John Knowles, whom she married 28 Dec. 1670, and who was killed by the Indians in King Philip's War in 1675. They had a son, John Knowles, Jr., born 10 July, 1673, and who married Mary Sears.

Almost nothing is extant about this man and whom his children were would not be known excepting for his will. The burning of the land records of Barnstable county precludes finding out

much about the early inhabitants of that section. Stephen Atwood settled in Eastham, Mass.

He left this Will:—

“In the Name of God Amen. The Twentyeth day of May in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and fifteen I, Stephen Atwood of Eastham in the County of Barnstable in his Maj'tes Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, Husbandman.....

Impr. I give and bequeath to my loveing wife Apphia Attwood the whole Improvement of all my houseing, Lands, Marsh or Meadow ground that I am Possesst of In the Town of Eastham Dureing her Naturale Life if she remain my widdow untill her death but if she see cause to marry again she shall have the bed whereon we now Lodge with the Curtains and what ever of right belongeth to said bed; whom I likewise constitute make & ordaine my soul Executrix of this my last will & testament.

Item. I give to my well beloved son Stephen Atwood a double portion of all the moveable estate of mine that shall remain after my wife's death or marriage, and the remaining part of said moveable estate to be equally divided amongst my sons and Daughters to say “Meciel Atwood, Joseph Atwood, & to my Daughters Hannah Atwood and Apphia Attwood.

Item. To my well beloved sons Eleaser Atwood and Joshua Atwood I have already given unto them their parts of my Estate In the price that I sett upon the farm they bought of me, said farm being at a place commonly called Bound Brook.

Item. I give to my well beloved son Thomas Atwood all and singular my lands . . . and Tenements with all the Rights, Tittles profits thereunto belonging or any wise of Right Appertaining by him and his heirs and assigns freely and peacably to be possessed and injoyed for ever after the death of my loveing wife as above said or if she sees cause to marry.

His

STEPHEN X ATTWOOD” (L. S.)

mark

Witnesses :

Isaac Pepper

Samuel Doane

Martha Doane

The will was proved by Apphia Attwood, dau. of Stephen Attwood and Apphia Bangs, July 12, 1722. (Barnstable Co., Probate, 4:67, 68.)

The children of Stephen Attwood and Apphia Bangs, born probably in Eastham, Mass., were:

1. Stephen, born about 1677; married 26 June 1700, Eastham, Martha Pike.
2. Machiel, born about 1679; married 25 Oct. 1700, Eastham, Prudence Rogers. Went to Truro.
3. JOSEPH, born about 1681; married Bethia Crowell.
4. Eleazer, born 1682; died 29 Mar. 1729 in 48th year., left children.
5. Hannah, born about 1684; unmarried 1715.
6. Apphia, born about 1686; married 5 Apr. 1716, Joseph Mayo.
7. Joshua, born about 1690.
8. Thomas, born about 1695; married 23 Apr. 1724, Phebe Mayo.

III. JOSEPH ATWOOD, born in Eastham, Mass., about 1681, died there about 1738. He married in Barnstable or Yarmouth, 12 Oct. 1710, Bethia Crowell, born in "Nobscusset," 13 Apr. 1689, died in Eastham, Mass., 2 Jan. 1752, in her 63d year, daughter of John and Bethia (Sears) Crowell.

Administration of his estate was granted probably to his son Nathaniel, an inventory being filed in 1738, as shown by the following:

"Barnstable, ss. March 20th, 1740.

I allow and order to the widow Bethiah Attwood out of the personall Estate of her late Deceased Husband Joseph Atwood the sum of thirt pounds . . . ."

"By the Hon. Sylvanus Bourne, Esqr. Judge of the Probate for the County of Barnstable To Settle the sum remaining on the acct of Nathaniel after the following manner and form (being the sum of £85 7s 7d) to be divided viz to ye Widdow  $\frac{1}{3}$  the remainder to nine children the Eldest a Double share the Others a single share each: eldest son Nathaniel, Bethia, Hannah, Mary, Joseph, Joshua, Elisha, John and Abigail . . . ."

(Ibid. 5:456, 467.)

The following named children of Joseph Attwood and Bethia Crowell were all born in Eastham, Mass.:

1. Bangs, born 21 June, 1711; died before 1736.
2. NATHANIEL, born 18 Apr. 1713; married Abigail Stevens and Priscilla Freeman.

3. Bethia, born 26 Mar. 1715; probably married 10 May, 1733,  
Willard Knowles of Eastham.
4. Hannah, born 14 Dec. 1716.
5. Mary, born 15 Nov. 1718.
6. Joseph, born 19 Feb. 1720-1.
7. Joshua, born 7 Oct. 1722.
8. Elisha, born 25 Apr. 1725.
9. John, born 7 Feb. 1726-7.
10. Abigail, born about 1729.

IV. NATHANIEL ATWOOD, born in Eastham, Mass., 18 Apr. 1713, died there, 28 Mar. 1769, in his fifty-sixth year. He married first, published in Eastham, 7 Jan. 1735-6, Abigail Stevens, born March 14, 1715, died in Eastham, 6 Oct. 1760, in her forty-sixth year, daughter of Richard Stevens and Abigail Treat. He married secondly, in Eastham, April 9, 1761-2, Priscilla Freeman, who survived him.

Nathaniel Atwood was a yeoman farmer in Eastham. He left the following will:—"In the Name of God Amen the fourth day of February in the year of our Lord one Thousand Seven Hundred and Sixty nine I Nathaniel Atwood of Eastham in the County of Barnstable in the Province of Massachusetts Bay, Yeoman, \_\_\_\_\_

Impr. I give to my five sons Nathaniel, Richard, Stevens, Enoch & Heman and to my daughter Abigail all my Estate both Real and Personal not above disposed of; and my Will is that Nathaniel and Abigail shall have one share that is to say, one fifth part of all my Estate excepting what I have given to my Beloved Wife and the remainder I give to my four sons namely Richard, Stevens, Enoch & Heman to them their Heirs and Assigns forever to be equally divided between them. I likewise constitute make and ordain my son Nathaniel Atwood my Executor . . .

NATHANIEL ATWOOD (L. S.)"  
(Barnstable Probate, 13:445.)

Witnesses:

John Atwood  
Joshua Knowles  
Barn Freeman.

Children of Nathaniel Attwood and his first wife, Abigail Stevens were born in Eastham, Mass., as follows:

1. Bangs, born 11 Jan. 1736–7, died young.
2. NATHANIEL, born 4 Oct. 1736; married Sarah Remick.
3. Richard, born 7 June, 1741; died 6 April, 1801, in his sixtieth year; married Ruth Paine who died 23 Aug. 1803, in her 58th year.
4. Stevens, born 1743; died Sept., 1610, aged 67, Fairfield, Me.; married 12 July, 1772, Boston, Mass. Mrs. Rhoda Sears, born 11 Oct. 1748, Harwich; died 27 Sept. 1620, Fairfield, aged 72. He wed in Maine.

Children of Stevens Attwood and Rhoda Sears were:

1. Stevens, born May 13, 1773, Boston, bapt. July 11, 1773, Brewster, "son of Stevens Attwood of Boston, his mother having previously owned the covenant".
2. Rhoda, bapt. Dec. 17, 1775, Brewster, daughter of "Stevens Atwood of Providence".
3. Ezra, probably born about 1777.
4. Robert, bapt. Nov. 7, 1779, Brewster.
5. Grace, born probably about 1781.
6. Rebecca—Sears, bapt. Oct. 1785, Orleans.
7. Phebe—Sears, bapt. June 3, 1787, Orleans.
8. John, bapt. June 26, 1789, Orleans.

Capt. Stevens Atwood removed to Fairfield, Maine, about 1795, having previously lived in Boston, Providence and Eastham, Mass.

Nathaniel Attwood and his second wife, Priscilla Freeman, had the following children:

6. Heman, mentioned in his father's will, born July 13, 1754; married Phebe Knowles; married 2nd Abigail Young.
7. Abigail, mentioned in her father's will, was a minor in 1770.

V. Capt. NATHANIEL ATWOOD born in Eastham, Mass., 4 Oct. 1738; died in Boston, Mass., 20 July, 1773, aged thirty-five years. He married in Eastham, Mass., 21 Jan. 1762, Sarah Remick, born there 9 Apr. 1742; died in Boston, Mass., 20 Jan. 1773, aged thirty-one, daughter of Christian and Hannah (Freeman) Remick.

Capt. Nathaniel Atwood evidently left Eastham, just after his marriage and moved to Boston where he lived until his death,

having two of his children baptised in the New North Church, his wife, Sarah, being admitted a member there, 18 Feb. 1763. Since neither he nor his wife lived very long after their marriage, his life history is short.

He left the following will: ————— Rec. Vol. 73:20.

“In the Name of God, Amen, I Nathaniel Atwood of Boston—  
Mariner, being sick & weak in Body . . .

. . . as to my Worldly Estate I Give and bequeath the same as follows, Viz. Imprimis I order that all my Just Debts & funeral Expences be paid. Item all my Estate, Real, Personal or Mixt. I gave and bequeath unto my Dear and only Child Sarah to hold the same to her & her heirs forever, & I desire my Executors to improve the same to her best advantage, and so much thereof or of the Income or Interest thereof; be applyed for her education & support & when she shall attain to Lawful Age or day of Marriage which shall first happen that the whole thereof be paid to her, & lastly I do hereby constitute & appoint my Brother Stephen Atwood & my Friend Capt. Saml Doggett executors of this my last Will Testament . . . 16th day of April, 1773.

Nath Atwood & a Seale”

Wit: Edward Gray

Martha Phillips.

Proved, 31 July, 1773, the acting executor being Capt. Samuel Dogget as Stevens Atwood was not in Boston.

The inventory amounted to £469 12s 4d and contains many items of mahogany furniture, pictures and looking-glasses, a silver watch and silver table ware, shoe and knee buckles, silver and gold sleeve buttons, gold necklace, Delph ware, pewter, brass, and glass dishes; ordinary household furniture, including a mahogany four post bed, carpets and rugs; a pew, No. 99, in Dr. Andrew Eliot's Meeting House; horse saddle and bridle;  $\frac{1}{4}$  part of schooner Polly & Sally,  $\frac{1}{3}$  part of sloop Desire; 280 Quintals of Fish; many articles of a mariner's belongings, etc. The inventory is long and shows that he had been a successful fisherman and had a comfortable home. He apparently had no real estate in Boston, neither did his brother Stephen. Among the records of certain immigrants who came to Boston from Halifax and Louisburg, from 1763 to 1767, are a number showing that Capt.

Nathaniel Atwood brought them as Capt. of the Sloops Betsey, Sally, Nancy, but most in the Swallow, with passengers from Halifax.

The account of Samuel Dogget, Admr. of Estate of Nathaniel Atwood, late of Boston, deceased, contains many interesting items. He received money from various people, among them John and Edward Gray, William Freeman, the Remicks, and for one-third part of the whaling voyage of the sloop "Desire" Elkanah Hopkins, master; and from Katherine Williams, execx. of John Williams. He paid Nathaniel Somes for Capt. Atwood's half of a shipping bill; Cades the Sexton, "for cleaning ye house"; "To carting Sundries from ye House for the child"; for shoes for Sarah Atwood and for schooling; "To Cash for Certificate, from ye Probate Office to send to London"; "Sarah Bunyan for Sally Atwood's Schooling"; Postage of letter from Baltimore; "pd Stevens Atwood". Total amt. pd. £726:6:3¾. 31 Mar., 1775. (Suffolk Co., Probate, 73:20, et seq.) Samuel Paine of Boston, Merchant, was made guardian of Sarah Atwood, minor, under fourteen, daughter of Nathaniel Atwood, late of Boston, mariner, deceased, in 1781. Samuel Ballard, Taylor, and Simon Eliot, "Tobagonist" were the sureties. He also filed an account showing that he paid for her "Miss" Sarah Atwood, to Capt. Joshua Paine for going to the Eastwood, where he transacted business for her, doubtless in connection with her grandfather Atwood's estate; to Mr. Turner for dancing (William Turner was the fashionable dancing master of the time). Clothes, schooling, and fare to Newbury and return. He also conducted a suit at law in her behalf. (Ibid. 80: 119,84:109.)

Nathaniel Atwood, died in Boston on July 20, 1773; the News Letter dated July 22, has a notice—"Died Capt. Nathaniel Atwood, formerly in the Halifax Trade. His funeral will be tomorrow afternoon at 5 o'clock from his Dwelling House near the Mill Bridge, when his Friends and Acquaintance are desired to attend." In the second week in August, his effects were sold at auction and the advertisement in the Gazette places his residence on Middle Street, now a part of Hanover Street, and gives his neighbors.

Nathaniel Atwood his wife and children are all buried in the Granary Burying Ground.

Children of Nathaniel Atwood and his wife, Sarah Remick, all born in Boston, Mass., were:

1. Sarah, born 28 Jan., 1764, probably baptized in Eastham, Mass., died 11 Jan., 1765, aged 11 mos., 14 days.
2. Nathaniel, born 3 Sept., 1766; baptized 21 Sept., 1766, New North Church; died young.
3. SARAH, born 29 Apr., 1768; died 15 Aug., 1828; married July 20, 1788, Old South Church, John Boonen Graves, Esq., by Rev. Joseph Eckley (See Graves family).

#### References:

Eastham Records, Boston Records, Suffolk and Barnstable Probate records, Cemetery and Church records of Boston and the "Mayflower Descendants."

VI. SARAH ATWOOD, born April 29, (Family Bible, Apr. 28,) 1768, Boston, Mass., daughter of Nathaniel Atwood, Jr. Wife of John Boonen Graves, Esq.; married July 20, 1788, was left an orphan at the age of 5 years; placed under the guardianship of Samuel Doggett, or, at least, was cared for by him as administrator of her father's estate. The accounts show that, in accord with the expressed wish of her father in his will, she began her schooling in October, 1773, and seems to have had good care until for some reason not discovered, about 1780, when she was 12 years old, she was placed under the guardianship of Samuel Paine, having passed through the siege of Boston, though it is not certain that she remained in Boston all of that time. His accounts show the families with which she was boarded, her expenses for clothing, etc.; her two trips to Newbury, her schooling and dancing lessons; and, after the death of Samuel Doggett, his action against Doggett's executors, for money and effects belonging to Sarah Atwood and received judgment for 409 pounds 10 shillings 1 penny, to satisfy which there was set off a tract of land in Bowdoinham, County Lincoln, (now in Maine) containing 279 acres. In 1785, on his petition to be allowed to sell this property, the Court granted the petition on the 12th day of March, 1785, when his final account was rendered. This accounts for Sarah Atwood to within a trifle over three years of her marriage.

The following account from a local newspaper of the death of Capt. Nathan Attwood and his wife, is given here to show the

writing of the times. Doubtless Capt. N. was at least a "cousin German" as the ancients would have put it:

"The Particulars of the HARWICH TRAGEDY.

*"Harwich, County of Barnstable, Apr. 8, 1785.*

"On the morning of the Lord's Day last, a most melancholy . . . and Provincetown. The Particulars of this unhappy and sorrowful accident are as follows, viz.:

"A Schooner partly owned and commanded by Mr. Nathan Atwood, sailed from this harbour about six o'clock in the morning, bound to the above Place; but they had not been on their passage long before a plank started, as is imagined, and she gained water so fast, that before ten o'clock the ill-fated vessel, and unfortunate Schooner sunk down to the bottom headforemost, not leaving the least discovery of even the top of the masts, having on board Mr. NATHAN ATWOOD, and Mrs. MARY ATWOOD, his wife, and Mr. HEMAN FINNEY, her brother. A little time before she foundered, Mr. JONATHAN SEARS, and Mr. CYRENIUS FREEMAN, got a raft, which they made of some boards, and started for the shore which was at the distance of some three miles, but Mr. Freeman being very much bruised and chilled, (as these unhappy Persons were on the raft almost nine hours), expired just before he reached the shore, and Mr. SEARS was almost expired when he arrived, being scarce able to extricate himself from the surf, which he happily effected by crawling (though already much bruised and exhausted with the cold), on his hands and knees several rods, the surf breaking over his head several times, before he could get clear of it, after which he was obliged to travel in that wretched manner near a mile before he could discover any building. The first he met with was a barn, that fortunately for him, belonged to a good Samaritan, Mr. SAMUEL HOPKINS of Truro, the owner of which found him in that deplorable state, bruised and exhausted, almost to death, and had he not received immediate relief, which was afforded to him with the utmost humanity, tenderness, and compassion, he must have unavoidably perished in a few hours. Mr. JOHN CLARKE, got on another raft, but it being very windy, they parted from each other, in a short time after they set out, and Mr. SEARS saw no more of him, but supposed he perished soon after. The wreck was not seen from the shore, as it was very foggy, at the time this sorrowful affair happened, or

perhaps some assistance might have been given to the people. One thing we think worthy of remark, and which seems to make this truly Tragical Scene most affecting, is, the almost unparallel conjugal affection showed by Mr. ATWOOD, one of the unhappy sufferers, to his equally distressed mate, which being so rare an instance of magnanimity, fortitude and a cheerful resignation to the divine will of the ALMIGHTY, that we cannot omit to record it on this Sheet, as we think his conduct an honour to human nature, and ought to be handed down to Posterity, as it will serve to show that there is yet remaining in this Western Hemisphere, some private virtue, founded in a regard to the Fair Sex; as we find many instances transmitted to us in the History of the Oriental World.

“Mr. ATWOOD on perceiving the vessel sinking, jumped on to one of the rafts, that was prepared alongside of her, but on hearing the bitter shrieks and piercing cries of his dear Comfort, the Friend of his bosom, and the other poor drowning souls, which seemed to reach to Heaven, and who were on the verge of eternity, and begging for mercy from GOD, he, like some of the ancient BRAMIST women, when showing their affection for their departing Husbands, heroically jumped back again into the sinking vessel, chusing rather to perish with her who had been the Partner of his joy, and affliction, than to have the anxiety and horror of mind in beholding so shocking and afflicting a Scene, and not having it in his power to alleviate her distress.”

A doleful poem follows, which is not remarkable except for its antiquity, and is addressed especially to the Atwood family.

“Sold at the office in Essex Street, near the Liberty Pole, 1785; where may be found N<sup>os</sup>. I. II. III. of the ‘Bloody Register;’ Cash paid for Linen Rags.”

#### REFERENCES:

All of the above information was gotten from Mary Lovering Holman, 9 Ashburton Place, Boston, Mass. and Arthur W. Ackerman, same address.

(See Graves Family.)

## BANGS FAMILY

EDWARD BANGS was born at Chichester, Sussex County, England, about 1592. There is also a family tradition that the family came from the Isle of Man. The family crest used in 1680 by Jonathan Bangs is the same as that used by Sir John Banks of London during the reign of the Stuarts. Therefore the name of Bangs might have been, in earlier days, spelled Banks. Edward Bangs (or Banks) came to Plymouth, Mass., in the Ship Anne, July 31st, 1623, where he was granted four acres of land on "the other side of Eel River" that year. In the division of the cattle in 1627 he became part owner of the "Great White Back Cow" brought over in the Ship Anne. He is one of the Recognized Historic Founders of Plymouth Colony. He was made a free-man in 1633. In 1634, 1635 and 1636 he was the assessor for Plymouth Colony. He removed to Eastham in about 1644, from which place he served as Deputy to the General Court, 1647, 1650, 1663. He married Lydia, daughter of Robert Hicks about 1627, and died at Eastham during the winter of 1677/8, aged 86 years. His wife, Lydia Hicks, died before 1651 and he married second, Rebecca—surname unknown.

A tablet erected to his memory bears the following inscription:

"Edward Bangs, one of the original purchasers and first settlers of Nauset, 1644, and an incorporator of the town, renamed Eastham in 1651. The first Treasurer of the town holding the office continuously from 1646 until 1665; chosen Deputy to the General Court and elected Selectman in 1665 for two years. He came to Plymouth in the Anne, 1623, and was the founder of the American branch of the Bangs family. He died in Eastham in 1677 or 1678, aged 86 years. His life work is known by the record of his forty years' service in Plymouth Colony. In appreciation of his character, his faithfulness to every trust and his high conception of duty as a member of the church and a citizen of the Colony this memorial is erected by the Edward Bangs Descendants, August, 1916."

The date of death of his second wife is not known.

He was a shipwright by profession and is said to have built the first boat constructed in Massachusetts. It was of about 40 or 50

tons burden. His will is dated Oct. 19, 1677, and was proven March 5, 1678.

His children were:

1. Rebecca, married Oct. 16 or 28, 1654, to Jonathan Sparrow.
  2. John, married Hannah Smalley Jan. 23, 1660.
  3. Sarah, married 1656, Capt. Thomas Howes, Jr.
  4. Capt. Jonathan, born 1640; died Nov. 9, 1728; married July 16, 1664, Mary Mayo, bapt. Feb. 3, 1650. She died 1711, aged 66. He married 2nd Sarah (?), who died 1719, aged 78; he married 3rd Mrs. Ruth Young, daughter of Daniel Cole.
  5. Lydia, married Dec. 24, 1661, Benjamin Higgins.
  6. Hannah, married April 30, 1662, John Doane, son of Deacon John Doane.
  7. Joshua, married Dec. 1 or Sept. 5, 1669, Hannah Scudder. He died Jan. 14, 1709/10.
  8. Bethia, born May 28, 1650; married Gresham Hall of Norwich.
  9. Mercy, born Oct. 15, 1651; married Dec. 28, 1670, Stephen Merrick.
  10. APPHIA, born Oct. 15, 1651; married Dec. 28, 1670, John Knowles; married second Joseph or Stephen Attwood.
- (See Attwood family)
- } Twins

If his first wife died in 1650 or 1651, probably the first 7 children were by his first wife, Lydia Hicks, the last 3 by his second wife, Rebecca (?).

#### REFERENCES:

- History of Eastham, Mass., page 191.  
 Mayflowers Descendants, Vol. 17, page 70.  
 Genealogical Dictionary of New England, Vol. I, page 111.  
 Genealogy of Bangs Family, by Dean Dudley of Boston.  
 Comprehensive History, etc., of Eastham, Wellfleet, Orleans, pages 18-19.  
 Freeman's Cape Cod, Vol. I, page 639.  
 Genealogy, Mass., page 1566, Vol. III.

(See Attwood Family.)

## BAUDRY FAMILY.

URBAIN BAUDRY, called LaMarche, perhaps because he was some relation of Jean La Marche of Three Rivers, was a tail-landier (Toolmaker). He was born in 1621. His father was Jean Baudry and his mother, Jeanne Bertin of Luche in Anjou. Urbain Baudry came to Canada about 1646. The family is an old one in France; in fact there is a St. Baudry whose feast is July 7. Urbain Baudry lived at Three Rivers in Canada. He was buried there Aug. 23, 1682, in the Church of Three Rivers.

He married Madeleine Boucher; their marriage contract is dated Nov. 18, 1647. She was baptised 1634, and was buried Sept. 4, 1691, in the Church at Three Rivers. Her death is recorded ten days later at Montreal.

Urbain Baudry and Madeleine Boucher had the following children:

1. Marie, baptised Dec. 2, 1650; married Nov. 11, 1670, Jacques Lefebvre.
2. Joseph, baptised Nov. 13, 1653, at Quebec.
3. GUILLAUME, baptised Oct. 2, 1656; married June 12, 1682, to Marie Jeanne Soulard. He was buried Feb. 26, 1732.
4. Jeanne, baptised June 17, 1659; married Nov. 21st, 1672, Jacques Dugay. She was buried Nov. 22, 1700.
5. Madeleine, baptised Nov. 19, 1661; married 1st, Jean de Puybaro, Nov. 25, 1681; 2nd, Marien Tailhadier at Boucherville Jan. 8, 1688. She was buried Nov. 20, 1730.
6. Marguerite, baptised Mar. 22, 1665; married Nov. 11, 1687, Francois Poisson. She was buried April 24, 1706 at Champlain.
7. Francoise, baptised Feb. 3, 1668; married Nov. 6, 1691, Jacques Rondeau.
8. Marie Madeleine, baptised July 7, 1671; married March 16, 1698, Jacques Hubert. She was buried May 26, 1699, at Montreal.
9. Joseph, baptised Oct. 19, 1673; married Nov. 15, 1706, Francoise Leclerc.
10. Jacques, baptised Sept. 13, 1676; married Angelique Archambault.
11. Anne, baptised June 24, 1680.

GUILLAUME BAUDRY, baptized October 2, 1656, called Des Buttes; married July 13, 1682, at Quebec, Marie Jeanne Soulard. He was buried February 26, 1732, at Three Rivers. She was buried March 12, 1742.

Guillaume Baudry, also called Des Buttes, was armorer of the King and a silversmith.

Guillaume Baudry and his wife Jeanne Soulard had the following children:

1. Marie Jeanne, bapt. April 24, 1683, died young.
2. JEAN, bapt. July 3, 1684; married October 8, 1721, Marie Louise Doyon.
3. Jean Baptiste, bapt. Dec. 8, 1685; buried March 22, 1717.
4. Claude Charles, bapt. June 20, 1687; married Madeleine Boudoin.
5. Pierre, bapt. April 27, 1689; buried November 10, 1713.
6. Marie Françoise, bapt. January 27, 1691; married August 25, 1722, François Picard.
7. Jacques, bapt. October 6, 1692; buried April 11, 1715.
8. Marie Jeanne, bapt. April 8, 1696; married October 17, 1712, Michael Perrot.
9. Catherine, bapt. May 1st and buried July 4, 1697.
10. Louise Genevieve, bapt. March 23, 1699.
11. Louise, bapt. Oct. 20, 1700; married February 4, 1731, Jean Baptiste Gatién.
12. Joseph, bapt. August 25, 1702; buried July 29, 1725.
13. Urbain, bapt. June 3, 1704; buried Dec. 12, 1728.
14. Marie Josephine, bapt. May 14, 1706; buried February 10, 1738.
15. René, bapt. November 16, 1707; married August 16, 1734, Marie Charles Le Pelle; buried Sept. 20, 1745.

JEAN BAUDRY, more commonly called Jean Bte Desbuttes and sometimes St. Martin, was the son of Guillaume Baudry and Marie Jeanne Soulard, his wife. Jean Desbuttes as he was generally known at Detroit was baptized July 3, 1684; married October 8, 1721 at Quebec, Marie Louise Doyon. He was buried November 20, 1755 at Detroit; his wife September 15, 1778.

By trade Jean Desbuttes was an armorer. He lived to the southeast of Detroit. He is said to have lived in the famous Cadillac House where: "First cradled were the Anthon's, Renowned in Church and State."

Following is a copy of the marriage certificate of Jean Desbuttes and Marie Louise Doyon:

(Translation)

“This day the Twenty-eighth of October, Seventeen hundred and Sixty (1760). After the publication of one announcement at the parish Mass. On Sunday of 26th current month. Between Mr. Jacques Desbuttes St. Martin, Interpreter of the Huron language, Major (or oldest) son of Jean Desbuttes Saint Martin, Master Mechanic of Arms (or gunsmith), and Marie Louise Doyon. His Father and Mother, are members of this parish on his part—and Marianne Navarre, daughter Mr. Robert Navarre, Delegated Attorney General in this town and General Receiver of His Majesty’s Dominions & Marie Barvis, her Father & Mother are members of this parish, and having given them for good and legitimate reasons written in our Register of Dispences (page 20) accorded them the Dispense of Two other announcements, and having found no impediment or Canonical Opposition we received publicly their mutual consent and gave them the Nuptial Blessing in presence of Mr. DeBelestre Commandent for the King in this Town and Dependencies, Sirs Beaulieu, Labutte, Fathers Desbutte and Jadot, which have signed with us.

Undersigned. Piquotée Debelestre, St. Martin, Beaulieu, Jadot, Dabent, Marie Anne Navarre and Simple Bocquet, Mre. Recollet.”

Children of Jean Baudry or Desbuttes and Marie Louise Doyon, his wife, were:

1. Louise Marguerite Genevieve, bapt. January 31, 1724; married 1st Jacques Godet; married 2nd Joseph Dussault; buried July 19, 1786.
2. Marguerite Amable, bapt. November 7, 1731; married June 26, 1758, Louis Jadot; buried Sept. 26, 1764. (See Jadot Family.)
3. JACQUES, bapt. August 23, 1733; married October 28, 1760, Marie Anne Navarre. He was buried June 18, 1768. His wife married 2nd Geo. Christian Anthon Oct. 1, 1773.

JACQUES was interpreter of the Huron language at Detroit and is often mentioned in Parkman’s Conspiracy of Pontiac. Marie Anne Navarre, the widow of Jacques, when she married

Dr. Anthon, was also the guardian of her sister-in-law's only child by Louis Jadot. Genevieve Jadot, an orphan, upon the death of her Aunt, Marie Anne Navarre, became the ward of Dr. George Christian Anthon and later, on July 18, 1778, became his second wife.

REFERENCES :

Dictionnaire Genealogique Des Familles Canadienne, Vol. I, page 31.

Ancestry of Genevieve Anthon, pages 21-22.

NOTE: No reference in Jesuit Relations to Urbain. Later members of the family are mentioned in Vol. 69, page 309.

(See Jadot Family.)

## BLAGGE FAMILY.

## I.

CAPT. BENJAMIN BLAGGE was a mariner from Plymouth, England. He bought a water lot from the City on December 23, 1686, and probably lived there when on shore. On November 3, 1689, he arrived in New York Harbor with a French prize. A few months before Jacob Leisler had seized the government of New York in the name of William and Mary and turned out Gov. Nicolls. Samuel Edsall, Blagge's father-in-law, being one of Leisler's followers, probably saw an opportunity to turn this rather insignificant capture of a French prize into a French Popish Plot. From this time on Blagge appears as a member of Leisler's council.

Leisler tried to unite the Colonies against the French and sent Benjamin Blagge on Feb. 24, 1689, to New Haven to get the aid of the New England Colonies through the efforts of Governor Treat of Connecticut. Leisler thought the united command would be given to New York. In this case he, Leisler, would have been in command and would have acted with energy. However, when the command was given to Winthrop of Massachusetts, the expedition failed, either through the lack of cooperation on the part of New York or because of bad management on the part of Winthrop; perhaps because of both. After the failure of the Expedition against Canada, Blagge was sent to England to lay before the King, Leisler's side of the dispute in New York. Blagge failed on his mission. Perhaps he arrived in England too late. Sloughter had been already commissioned as Governor of New York and was on the point of sailing for his post when Blagge landed. The King was not in London and Blagge's papers were turned over to the new Governor with the request that he read them. Perhaps he did. Perhaps not.

Sloughter delayed his sailing, sending ahead a Major of Foot, Ingoldsby by name. Leisler foolishly refused to acknowledge him as the representative of the Crown. This gave his enemies the opportunity to work against him and a few days later when Sloughter arrived, Leisler was regarded as nothing more than a rebel by the English forces. The rest is history.

Blagge was lucky enough to be out of the country when Leisler

and Milbourne, his son-in-law were hung. However, he returned to New York and finally died there about 1702. His Will, on file in office of the Surrogate of New York County, reads as follows: "In the name of God, Amen. Know all men who shall see this present instrument, that I, Benjamin Blagge, of the city of New York, mariner, being in perfect health, but knowing the weakness of mankind and the frailty of this life"; makes his wife, Judith, sole executor. If she marry again, then she is to have one-half of the estate, and the other half to my children, Edward, Samuel, and Mary. Dated June 6, 1695. Witnesses, Jacobus Kip, Jesse Kip, G. Van Inburgh. Proved, December 31, 1702, and Edward Blagge is appointed administrator and guardian of his brother, Samuel Blagge, the widow, Judith Blagge, having died without having proved the will. Entered in the Secretary's Office.

Daniel Honan, Sec."

CAPT. BENJAMIN BLAGGE married Judith Edsall, and they had the following children:

1. EDWARD, bapt. March 11, 1680; married J. Vickers May 12, 1703.
2. Elizabeth, bapt. Oct. 30, 1683; probably died young.
3. Benjamin, bapt. May 29, 1686; probably died young.
4. Samuel, bapt. February 3, 1689.
5. Mary, bapt. July 1, 1694.

NOTE:

Capt. Benjamin Blagge may have been the son of Henry Blagge of Braintree and Boston and Elizabeth his wife. The names of the various children indicate relationship of some kind.

Henry Blagge and Elizabeth, his wife, had the following children:

1. Philip, born Jan. 24, 1643; married Susanna.
2. Nathaniel, born 1646; married Judith.
3. Benjamin, born June 18, 1650; married Judith Edsall.
4. Elizabeth, born Aug. 3, 1652.
5. Iyasltea, born Feb. 6, 1654.
6. Rebecca, born May 6, 1656.
7. Joseph, born Sept. 6, 1660; married Martha Kirkland.

## REFERENCES :

Savage Vol. I, page 191.  
Boston record of Births.

## II.

EDWARD BLAGGE, born March 11, 1680; married Johanna Vickers, May 12, 1703, grand-daughter of Gerard Douw and daughter of ————— Vickers. He was a merchant.

Edward Blagge and Johanna Vickers had the following children:

1. Alletta, bapt. Dec. 2, 1705.
2. JUDITH, bapt. February 23, 1707; married Sam Burdet. (See Burdet Family.)
3. Benjamin, bapt. July 3, 1709.
4. Edward, bapt. Sept. 9, 1711.
5. Johannes, bapt. January 11, 1713.
6. Johanna, bapt. July 24, 1715.
7. Samuel, bapt. March 9, 1718.

## REFERENCES :

Record of Births, Dutch Church of New York.

N. Y. Historical Society Abstract of Wills, Vol. I, pages 359-60; Vol. II, page 264.

Stokes' Iconography of N. Y., Vol VI, pages 160, 163.

Documentary History of N. Y. (O'Calaghan) Vol. II, pages 40, 55, 75, 247, 268, 360, 388; Vol. III, pages 657, 660, 683, 703, 737, 750, 751, 753, 763; Vol. IV, page 1135; Vol. V, page 212.

Brodhead's History of New York, Vol. II, pages 612, 620, 631, 641, 647.

(See Burdet Family.)

## BOMPERS FAMILY.

Judith or Johanna Bompers was the wife of Johannes Will. They had at least one child:

Elizabeth Will, born 1738; died 1811; married Isaac Stoutenburgh, Jr., January 29, 1761.

Johanna Bompers, wife of Johannes Will is a witness at the baptism of Isaac Stoutenburgh, Jr.'s son, Isaac III. Nov. 8, 1761. She is also a witness in 1762 (name then given as Judith) at baptism of child of Hendrick Will. Perhaps Hendrick was her son. His wife was Magdalena Hahn, daughter of Johannes Hahn and Magdalena Klotzen. Judith or Johanna Bompers may have been sister of Anna Maria Bompers, who married Jacob Sharp on November 2, 1728; likewise a sister of Jacob Bompers who had a wife, Anna Sabina Bloementier and a son, Lodevyk who married Margarita Broewer in 1745 or 1749.

## REFERENCES:

N. Y. Genealogical & Biographical Society, Collections  
Vol. I., page 205 (Marriages), also Vol. II.  
Baptisms, Dutch Church, Vol. II., page 254.

NOTE: Abraham Boemper was on Staten Island in 1745.  
(See Collections of New York Genealogical and  
Biographical Society, Vol. IV.  
Staten Island Church Records, page V.)

(See Will Family.)

## METJE BOONEN.

METJE BOONEN, from Arnheim in Gelderland, wife of Wessell Wessells, ran a public house in New York, (license granted Nov. 22, 1656), said to be the first, located on Perel (Pearl) Street, between Whitehall and Broad Streets. Owed money for excise tax October 29, 1667.

She probably had the following children, perhaps more :

1. Warner, married Anna Elizabeth Maskop about 1655. She married 2nd Francis Rombouts, Aug. 8, 1675.
2. Henrica, married Allard Anthony Burgtem April 12, 1656.
3. ANNETJE, married Samuel Edsall of Ridding in Barvychisier, old England, May 29, 1655.
4. Maria, married Pieter Aldrics, February 9, 1664.
5. Christina, married Barent Cours, May 30, 1675.

(See Wessells Family.)

## BOUCHER FAMILY.

GASPARD BOUCHER, the brother of Marin Boucher, came from Langy, parish of Mortagne, in the Province of Perche with his wife, Nicole Le Maire and their children, sailing from Dieppe in 1634 and landing in Quebec on June 4 or 5, 1634, in the company of other settlers taken over by Robert Giffard. The boat they came over in was under the command of Captain de Ville. Boucher and his wife brought over a lot of furniture, which he lost in transit to a fellow passenger, Thomas Giroust, who either confused it with his or stole it. Champlain decided the case about the furniture in 1638, in favor of Boucher. The beams in the Church at Cape Madeleine are those of the Church built by his son while he was Governor. Gaspard Boucher was a carpenter.

The children that came with Gaspard Boucher and his wife, Nicole Le Maire, were:

1. MADELINE, bapt. 1621; married 1647 Urbain Baudry. She was buried September 14, 1691, in Montreal. (See Baudry Family.)
2. Governor Pierre, baptized 1622; married 1st Madeline Chretienne, 1648; married 2nd Jeanne Crevier on June 9, 1652. Governor of Three Rivers; built the church at Cape Madeleine.
3. Nicholas, bapt. 1627; buried 1649, March 23.
4. Marie, bapt. 1630, married January 30, 1645 Ehenna De la Fond; buried November 30, 1706, at Batiscan.
5. Marguerite, bapt. 1634, married 1646 Sieur Toussaint Toupin or Sieur Dussault.

## REFERENCES:

Etude Genealogique sur Jean Guyon par Louis Guyon, page 33.

Dictionnaire Genealogique Des Familles Canadienne, Vol. I, page 2.

Not in Jesuit Relations.

More might be found in Notes of Abbe Farland on Registre de Notre Dame de Quebec.

(See Baudry Family.)

## BREWSTER FAMILY.

I. WILLIAM BREWSTER was appointed by Archbishop Sandys, in Jan. 1575/6, receiver of Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, England, and bailiff of the Manor House in that place, belonging to the Archbishop, to have life tenure in both offices. When he died in the summer of 1590, leaving wife Prudence, maiden name not known, he was postmaster, and it is claimed his father was before him.

II. ELDER WILLIAM BREWSTER was born in the winter of 1566-67 according to an affidavit made in Leyden, Holland, June 25, 1609, in which he, his wife Mary and son Jonathan declared their ages to be respectively 42, 40 and 16 years. The place of his birth is not known by documentary proof, but it was probably at Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, Eng. The parish registers there do not commence until 1695, too late to contain his baptism. He matriculated at Peterhouse, Cambridge, Dec. 3, 1580, but it does not appear that he remained long enough to take his degree. He is next found as Assistant to William Davison, Sec'y of State to Queen Elizabeth, accompanying him on his embassy to the Netherlands in Aug. 1585 and serving him at court after his return, until his downfall in 1587.

He then returned to Scrooby doing good "in promoting and furthering Religion." In 1590, he was appointed administrator to the estate of his father. Through the influence of William Davison, William Brewster succeeded his father as postmaster, which office he held until Sept. 30, 1607. He resided in the old Manor House there and in this house, the members of the Pilgrim Church were accustomed to meet on the Lord's Day.

In the latter part of 1607, the Pilgrims attempted to move to Leyden, Holland, but were imprisoned at Boston through the treachery of the master of the ship who engaged to transport them, but they finally reached that haven. While residing there he was chosen Elder of the Church. During the latter part of twelve years spent in Holland the Pilgrim band sailed for "Virginia" and on the Mayflower, was Elder Brewster, wife Mary and two sons. The boat anchored in Plymouth Harbor Dec. 16, 1620 (O. S.) where he bore an important part in establishing the Pilgrim Republic.

The Bradford History in listing the Mayflower passengers,

names "Mr. William Brewster; Mary his wife; with 2 sons, whose names were Love and Wrastling; and a boy was put to him called Richard More; and another of his brothers. The rest of his children were left behind and came over afterwards." Thirty years later Governor Bradford wrote "Mr. Brewster lived to very old age; about 80 years he was when he dyed, having lived some 23 or 24 years in ye countrie; & though his wife dyed long before, yet she dyed aged. His son Wrastle dyed a young man unmarried; his son Love lived till this year 1650 and dyed & left 4 children, now living. His daughters which came over after him are dead, but have left sundry children alive; his eldest son is still liveing and hath 9 or 10 children, one married who hath a child or 2."

His son Jonathan in a manuscript known as the Brewster Book, made the following entries: "Mary dyed at Plymouth in New England the 17 of April 1627." Elder Brewster "dyed at Plymouth in New England, 10th of April, 1644." The maiden name of his wife Mary, is not known.

Children of Elder William Brewster and his wife, Mary, were:

1. Jonathan, born Aug. 12, 1593, married Lucretia Oldham April 10, 1624. He died Aug. 7, 1659. She died March 4, 1678/9.
2. PATIENCE, came in the Ship ANN, in July 1623 and on Aug. 5, 1624, married at Plymouth, Thomas Prence, born Lechdale, Eng., died Plymouth, Mch. 29, 1673 in his 73rd year. She died there in 1634. (See Prence Family.)
3. Fear married May 22, 1627 Isaac Allerton, as his second wife. He died in February 1658/9. She died in Plymouth, Dec. 12, 1634.
4. A child died at Leyden; buried there June 20, 1609.
5. Love married May 15, 1634 Sarah Collier. He died 1650; Will is dated Oct. 6, 1650. His widow married 2nd Richard Parke who died 1665. She died April 26, 1691, aged 76 years.
6. Wrestling died young, unmarried.

#### REFERENCES:

Brewster Genealogy.

New England Register, Vol. 53, pages 109-111.

Bradford's History, pages 531, 535.

(See Prence Family.)

## BURDET FAMILY.

SAMUEL BURDET fled from La Rochelle some time between 1681 and 1685. He may have gone to England first and come over here later. At all events he was in New York as early as 1689. He married Judith Piaud a few years before that date either in England or this country. She arrived with her widowed mother, two sisters and a cousin from La Rochelle, the parish of St. Sauveur. They went first to England, probably about 1681. In 1685 her sister Jeanne, who was married to Simon Soumain, had a son baptized in the French Church in Threadneedle Street, London, June 10, 1685. Here also, Judith and Samuel Burdet may have been married.

Samuel Burdet and Judith Piaud had the following children:

1. Suzanne, bapt. April 14, 1689.
2. Samuel, bapt. May 17, 1691.
3. Judith, born Dec. 18, 1693.
4. SAMUEL, born February 24, 1695/6; married Judith Blagge, daughter of Benjamin Blagge.
5. Estienne, born April 11, 1698.
6. Esther, born Dec. 29, 1699.
7. Judith, born May 19, 1707.

SAMUEL BURDET, the younger, and his wife, Judith Blagge, had the following children:

1. Judith, born Aug. 13, bapt. Aug. 18, 1731.
2. Samuel, born Jan. 22, bapt. Feb. 9, 1735; married Sara Van Voorst April 14, 1759.
3. Suzanne, born April 28, bapt. May 11, 1738.
4. Edward, born Aug. 11, 1740.
5. ESTHER, born ———, bapt. Jan. 2, 1743; married Philip Hone Dec. 12, 1763; she died Sept. 18 and he died Sept. 13, 1798. (See Hone Family.)

## REFERENCES:

- The Huguenot Emigration to America, Vol. I, 288-291  
Note.  
Collections of the Huguenot Society of America, Vol. I,  
pages 3, 5, 8, 12, 24, 46, 70, 190.  
Stokes' Iconography, Vol. VI, page 319.  
(See Hone Family.)

## CARPENTER FAMILY.

ALICE CARPENTER was the daughter of Alexander Carpenter of Wrentham, England. She and the elder Bradford had had a romance in their youth, but the family of the lady objected to the marriage on account of the inferior rank and circumstances of Bradford, so she married Constant Southworth in England and Bradford also married —————. When they were both free to remarry, she came to this country, her husband having died in England and Bradford's wife having died in this country. The second marriage took place August 14, 1623.

Alice Carpenter and Constant Southworth had the following children, who came over with their mother in 1622:

1. CONSTANT, married, Nov. 2, 1637, Elizabeth, daughter of William Collier. He died in 1697.
2. Thomas.

## REFERENCE:

Freeman Genealogy, page 357.

(See Southworth Family.)

See Note, p. 74.

## CLAES FAMLY.

WILLEMTJE CLAES, wife of Gyspert Uytten (Uyteen) Bogert or Gyspert Elbertszen.

She was probably the sister of Annetje Claes who married Theunis Corneliszen. Annetje Claes is recorded as a young woman from Groot Schermer when she married December 11, 1681. Theunis Corneliszen's father took the name of Stile. His sons took various names.

## REFERENCES :

Purple's Ancient Families.

(See Uytten Bogart Family.)

## COLLIER FAMILY.

WILLIAM COLLIER of Duxbury was a merchant of London. He came over in about 1633 in the ship Mary Jane. He was one of "The Adventurers." (Underwriters of the Colony.) He had at least four daughters. He was assistant for 28 years, 1634-1665. One of two plenipotentiaries at the first meeting of Congress of the United Colonies, 1643, and among first purchasers of Dartmouth, 1652. He died 1670.

His wife's name was Jane; last name not known. She probably did not come to this country.

Children of William Collier and Jane (?) his wife.

1. Sarah, married March 15th or May, 1634, to Love Brewster.
2. Rebecca, married March 15th or May, 1634, to Job Cole.
3. Mary, married April 1st, 1635 to Thomas Prence, as his second wife.
4. ELIZABETH, married Nov. 2, 1637, Constant Southworth; he died March 10, 1679.

## REFERENCES :

- Genealogical Dictionary of New England, Vol. I, page 433.  
 Southworth Genealogy by Webber, page 29.  
 Colonial Dames N. Y. 1913.  
 History of Duxbury.  
 Brewster Genealogy, page 26, Notes.  
 (See Southworth Family.)

## COUILLARD FAMILY.

GUILLAUME COUILLARD, "Venerable Patriarch, que l'on voit assister au berceau de cette colonie". He went to Canada in 1613. He was born about 1591; buried March 4, 1663 in the church de l'Hotel Dieu. He married Aug. 26, 1621 at Quebec, Guillemette Hébert, (born 1608, buried Oct. 20, 1684) in the church de l'Hotel-Dieu. Champlain assisted at the wedding.

Guillaume Couillard and his wife Guillemette Hébert had the following children:

1. Louise, bapt. January 30, 1625; married Nov 3. 1637 Oliver Le Tardif; she was buried November 23, 1641.
2. Marguerite, bapt. August 10, 1626; married 1st, October 7, 1637 Jean Nicolet; 2nd, Nov. 12, 1646 Nicholas Macard; she was buried April 20, 1705.
3. Louis, bapt. May 18, 1629; married April 29, 1653 Genevieve Despres.
4. ELIZABETH, bapt. February 9, 1631; married November 27, 1645 Jean Guyon; she was buried April 5, 1704 at Chateau Richer. She was born during the time that the Kirkes held Quebec, and was probably baptised by an English Chaplain. (See Guyon Family.)
5. Marie, bapt. February 28, 1633; married 1st, October 25, 1648, Francois Bissot; 2nd, September 7, 1675, Jacques De Lalande.
6. Guillaume, bapt. January 16, 1635.
7. Madeleine, bapt. Aug. 9, 1639.
8. Nicolas, born April 6, 1641; buried June 24, 1661. He was killed on the Island of Orleans; buried in the church at Quebec.
9. Charles, bapt. May 10, 1647; married 1st, January 10, 1668, Marie Posquier; 2nd, Louise Couture; he was buried May 8, 1715, at St. Etienne de Beaumont.
10. Gertrude, bapt. Sept. 21, 1648; married February 6, 1664, Charles Aubert; she was buried November 18, 1664.

## REFERENCES:

Dictionnaire Genealogique Des Familles Canadienne, Vol. I, page 143.

Jean Guyon, page 101.

(See Guyon Family.)

## CROWELL FAMILIES OF YARMOUTH.

[From "Yarmouth Register" of May 9, 1850, written by  
AMOS OTIS, ESQ.]

The name CROWELL was originally written CROWE. The surname of Samuel, who died in Boston in 1646, is written on the Suffolk Records, CROWES. In 1669, in a grant of a house lot to Samuel of Yarmouth, his and Yelverton's surname is written CROELL. For the last century the uniform orthography has been Crowell, though in conversation it is often pronounced Crow.\* It is an ancient name in Great Britain. In the Rolls preserved in the Tower of London of the year 1254 Gilbert Crowe, of Berkshire, is named.

The names of the English ancestors of John and Yelverton Crowe, of Yarmouth, we have not ascertained. They probably belonged to the branch of the family that removed from the county of Kent to Wales. If any one has preserved the ancient coat of arms of his family, he will be able to ascertain satisfactorily his English ancestry. We are indebted to a friend for the following extracts from British books:†

"Crowe, of Llanherne, created July 8, 1627.—Extinct Lineage. I. Sir Sackville Crowe, of Llanherne, in the county of Caermarthen, son of William Crowe, Esq., of Socketts, in Kent, by Anne, his wife, daughter and co-heir of John Sackville, Esq., of Sussex, was created a Baronet in 1627. He married Mary, sister of John, eighth Earl of Rutland, daughter of Sir George Manners, of Haddon, by Grace, his wife, daughter of Sir Henry Pierrepont, knight, and dying in the Fleet Prison, London, in 1683, was succeeded by his son.

"II. Sir Sackville Crowe, of Llanherne, who married first, Anne, daughter of Sir William Rouse, baronet; and secondly,

---

\* It is said that the ancestors of some of the Crowells in the Middle States were Cromwells; that coming to this country some time after the death of the Protector, and thinking the name would be unpopular, they agreed on the passage to drop the *m* when the ship in which they came over dropped her anchor on the American coast. This story is perhaps apochryphal.

† In emblazoning shields of arms, metals, colors, and furs are used to depict the device, the technical terms of which are these—of metals, gold, called *or*, and silver *argent*, only are employed; of colors, red, called *gules*, blue, *azure*, black, *sable*, green, *vert*, and purple, *purpure*; and of furs, principally the skin of the little animal called *ermine* and a combination of gray and white squirrel skins called *vair*.

Elizabeth, daughter of William Herbert, Esq., of Llangattock, in Monmouthshire, and relict of Sir Henry Vaughn, of Derwhittenn, Caermarthenshire, but dying since [probably without issue] the Baronetcy became extinct. Arms, Gules, a chevron argent, between three cocks argent." Extract from Burke's "Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies," London, 1841.

"Peacham, an Englishman, in his Practice of Heraldry, tells us that the ancient family of the name of Crow in Suffolk carried for Arms, Gules, a Chevron between three cocks crowing, argent, as equivocally relative by their crowing, to the name of Crow." See Nisbet's Heraldry, Edinburgh, Vol. 1, 1722. [Peacham's "Minerva Britannia" was published 1612. His "Compleat Gentleman," 1622.]

"Crow, or Crowe [Brasted, Co. Kent], Gules, a Chevron, or, between three dunghill cocks argent, armed of the second, crest, a camel's head argent, vulned in the neck gules.

"Crowe [Llanherne, Co. Caermarthen, as borne by Sir Sackville Crowe, of that place, created a Baronet in 1627, and allowed to Gyles Crow, of Brasted, Co. Kent, in 1589], Gules a chevron, argent, between three cocks argent, crest—a cock argent, combed, wattled, and membered argent." Burke's "Armory," London, 1844.

Speaking of Anglo-Saxon names Lower says, "Mr. Kemble mentions two ladies of those times who bore the appellations of Crow and Duck [Craw and Eneade]." Lower's "English Surnames," London, 1849.

A pedigree of the Crow family of Brasted, County of Kent, is in the Harlean manuscripts 1548, fol. 185, b. Peacham, who wrote early in the seventeenth century, speaks of the ancient family of Crowe in Suffolk, and Gyles Crowe was of Kent in 1586. The baronetcy in Wales also came from Kent, and the name is now common in England.

The Yelvertons were a family of great antiquity in the county of Norfolk. They were Earls of Sussex, Viscounts Longueville, and Baronets. The present Viscount Avonmore is a Yelverton. It is probable that a member of the family of Crowe married a Yelverton, and this is the origin of the name in Yarmouth.

We are aware that inquiries of this character are not interesting to the general reader. Our only object in referring to their English ancestry is to give additional evidence of the fact that a large portion of the first settlers in the Old Colony belonged to the most distinguished families in Great Britain.

In a republican community it is of little importance to a man whether his ancestor who died three centuries ago was of noble or ignoble blood, because he is mainly indebted to himself for the character he sustains in life, and he may say with the poet,

“Go if your ancient but ignoble blood  
Has crept through scoundrels ever since the flood;  
Go, and pretend your family is young,  
Nor own your fathers have been fools so long.”

The descriptions of the coats of arms above given render it probable that all of the name of Crowe are descendants of a common ancestor. It is no easy task to trace out all the descendants of the two of the name who settled in Yarmouth.\* The town records were burnt in 1676, and the subsequent volumes are mutilated. On the town books scarce a record remains of the families of the “first comers,” and the returns made to the Old Colony Court are few and imperfect. Deeds, grants of land, and the Probate records afford some assistance to the antiquarian, yet they do not supply the place of carefully kept registers of births. Entire accuracy is rarely attainable in genealogical inquiries. We have spent much time in preparing this article, yet it is not so full or so accurate as we could desire.

Mr. John Crowe came over to this country in 1635, and was admitted the same year an inhabitant of Charlestown.† His wife, Mrs. Elishua Crowe, it appears, came over before that date, as her name is entered as a member of the first church in Charlestown, 4th, 11th mo. 1634, and she bought a house of Mr. Wm. Jennings the same year. On the 16th of the 4th mo. 1638, Mr. Crowe sold lands in Charlestown and removed to the Old Colony. On the 18th of December, 1638, he took the oath of allegiance to the king and fidelity to the government of New Plymouth.

---

\* The town of Dennis was set off from Yarmouth in 1793. It derived its name from the Rev. Josiah Dennis who was pastor of its principal church for thirty-seven years.—Ed.

† Frothingham's History.

Another Mr. John Crowe was one of the first settlers of Hartford, Conn., as early as 1639. He married Elizabeth, only child of Elder William Goodwin, of Hartford. They had nine children. He subsequently removed to Hadley, where he died Jan. 16, 1685, aged about seventy-nine years.

William Crowe, of Plymouth, was borne in 1629, and his will, dated Feb. 2, 1683-4, is on the Old Colony Records. He names his wife Hannah, three brothers, Samuel, Thomas, and Robert, and sister Mary, wife of John Herbert, all of Coventry Eng., his uncle, John Atwood of Plymouth and cousin, Lydia Rider (wife of Samuel Rider, 3d, and daughter of Thomas Tilden, of Marshfield). He does not appear to have been related to the Crowell families of Yarmouth.

Jan. 6, 1638, O. S. (1639 new), the Old Colony Court granted the lands at "Mattacheset now called Yarmouth" to Mr. Anthony Thacher, Mr. Thomas Howes, Mr. John Crowe, and John Coit. The latter removed to Salem, Thacher, Howes, and Crowe came to Yarmouth in the autumn of 1638, and were appointed by the Old Colony Court the first land committee "to make an equal division of the uplands now to be divided at this first division there, to each man according to his estate and quality; according to their instructions."

Governor Bradford had previously bargained with the Sagamore, Mashantumpaine, to sell the lands at Mattacheset to the whites; but the consideration had not been fully paid, and the lands to be reserved exclusively for the use of the Indians were not defined and bounded.

During the winter of 1638-9 the committee were employed in examining and surveying the lands and extinguishing the Indian titles. At the first the lands to be divided were laid out into furlongs, and afterwards subdivided into house lots and farm lots. The house lots were small and all laid out on the north side of the road. No one was allowed to obtain by purchase, or otherwise, two adjoining lots, and maintain only one house thereon. The object of this regulation was to induce the people to settle near each other, for common security against hostile attacks of the Indians, who were then very numerous within the bounds of Yarmouth.\*

The duties of the committee were arduous, and to perform them satisfactorily to all the inhabitants was impossible. The Indian fields or cleared uplands were not extensive, and to divide them according to their instruction necessarily created jealousies and dissatisfactions. The committee had to estimate each man's estate and his quality or the value of the service he had rendered or could probably render to the colony. The first could easily be done, but the latter never could be satisfactorily and was never afterwards attempted. The inhabitants complained to the court of the inequality of the division, and on the first of March, 1638, O. S. (1639 new), the court added to the committee Mr. Nicolas

---

\* "The Pawkunawkuts."—Ed.

Simpkins, William Palmer, Philip Taber, and Joshua Barnes, townsmen of Yarmouth.\*

All the persons to whom the lands were at first granted did not settle on them in the winter of 1638, and to prevent "unworthy persons" from becoming inhabitants of the towns, "It was ordered April 1, 1639 by the court, that whereas the lands at Mattacheese, were granted to divers persons that long since should have inhabited upon them, the which they have not performed;—And whereas the court is informed that those persons to whom they were first granted are not likely to inhabit them in their own persons, and lest such as are there should receive in unto them unworthy persons, whereof the court hath lamentable experience by committing the disposal of lands in like case,—the court doth order that only such of them which at present are there shall remain and make use of some lands for their present necessity, but shall not divide any portion of lands there either to themselves or any others, nor receive unto them any other persons (than such as were nominated at first,) without special license and appointment from the government, that such inconveniences may be prevented which in like cases have formerly happened."

The complaint of the inhabitants of the town, the addition of four to the committee and the foregoing court order, restricting their powers, would seem to warrant a conclusion, not credible to the justice and impartiality of the first committee. But we must not judge hastily. The difficulty was not caused by the injustice of the committee, but because it was impracticable to execute satisfactorily to all the parties the "instructions of the court."

On the Old Colony Records, under the date of March 3, 1639, O. S. (1640 new), is the following order: "Whereas Mr. Thacher, Mr. Crowe and Mr. Howes, the committee of Yarmouth were complained of,—to have made unequal divisions of lands there, whereupon the said committee have exhibited a very formal division of the said lands unto the court which is well approved of, and the court doth further order,—That the said committee shall receive no more inhabitants into the said town except they bring certificates from the places where they came under sufficient men's hands of the said places of their religious and honest carriage,

---

\* The power of the four added to the committee is not defined; their appointment was of temporary character, and though a majority, it does not appear that they had authority to control the actions of the committee.

which certificate shall be first allowed by the Governor and assistants before such person be admitted there."

Notwithstanding the approval of this court the difficulty was not ended. The inhabitants were yet dissatisfied, and at a court held in Yarmouth on the 17th of June, 1632, "before Edward Winslow, Miles Standish and Edmund Freeman, gentleman, three of the Assistants of the government." "It was ordered and concluded upon by the joint consent of all the inhabitants of Yarmouth that Capt. Standish shall be joined to the committees of said town of Yarmouth for the disposing of the lands there, and that not any lands hereafter be granted or laid forth without his consent, and that all lands hereafter to be laid forth shall be assigned to every person by lot except those which are already granted and assigned in particular, whereof sale and exchange have been made."

The assignment of the land by lot was a more equitable mode, especially between persons having equal rights, than the former method by grants by the committees.

The principle on which the divisions were made in 1710 was that one-third of the lands should be divided on the estates, one-third on the tenements, and one-third to all the male inhabitants twenty-one years of age and upwards, who were born in Yarmouth before 1661, or whose ancestors had assisted in the settlement of the town.

The difficulties respecting the first grants still continued, and in March, 1648, Captain Standish was authorized by the court "to have the hearing, and put an end to all differences as do remain in the town of Yarmouth."

On the 13th of May, 1648, Captain Standish heard and decided a large number of cases. As a civilian he evinced the boldness and decision of the warrior. Many were ejected from lands claimed by them. All former grants of uplands and meadows, excepting ten acres of upland and four of meadow to Mr. Gray, in "Nobscusset or Sasuet neck," were abrogated and the property returned to the possession of the town. Mr. Thacher, Mr. Howes, and Mr. Crowe, in consideration of their charges about the discovering, purchase, and other charges by them disbursed, about the same, claimed and took up more land than the townsmen thought to be justly due for their services. Mr. Thacher had taken up one hundred and thirty acres of upland and twenty-six acres of

meadow. He was allowed one hundred and ten acres of upland and his twenty-six acres of meadow. Mr. Howes had taken up one hundred acres of upland and twenty acres of meadow, and Mr. Crowe the same quantity. Each were allowed fourscore acres of upland and twenty acres of meadow. Thus was settled all "grievances about the laying out of lands from the beginning of the plantation to this 13th day of May, 1648."

Captain Standish having executed satisfactorily to all parties his commission "to put an end to all difference in the town of Yarmouth," on the 15th of May the following agreement was entered into to provide a remedy for any differences that might hereafter arise:

"It is agreed by Captain Standish, Mr. Crowe, Mr. Thacher, and Mr. Howes, the committees of this plantation of Yarmouth, and Richard Hore, Mr. Howes, William Nichersone, William Palmer, and Robert Dennis, in the behalf of the towns, that Mr. Staire, William Nichersone and Robert Dennis, shall be joined to the Committees for this present year, and thence after by the town, they have their liberty to choose other three to the committees aforesaid, so that the Committees shall not hereafter dispose of any lands either uplands or meadow without the consent of those three or two of them, and if any difference arise between them, which they cannot compose themselves, that they repair to Captain Standish for his direction."

In 1640 Mr. John Crowe was admitted a freeman of the colony, selected and appointed a magistrate. His associates were Thomas Dimmock, of Barnstable, and Edmund Freeman, of Sandwich; he was a deputy to the Old Colony Court in 1641, 1642, and 1643. On a loose leaf of the Yarmouth Records is the following notice of his death: "The late Mas Crowell was buried the 7th day of January, '72" O. S. His name is entered on the index to the births in Yarmouth, but the page to which reference is had is missing. Neither his will nor an account of the settlement of his estate is to be found on the Old Colony or Barnstable Probate records. The entry of his name on the index makes it probable that some of his children were born in Yarmouth. John, Thomas, and Moses were his sons, and Samuel probably. There was also a Judah Crow among the early inhabitants of Yarmouth; but I can find no evidence that he was son to Mr. John Crowe, or that he left any descendants.

## CHANGE OF NAME TO "CROWELL."

[From "The Yarmouth Register."]

All those Cape families who now bear the name of Crowell know that the first settlers called themselves Crow or Crowe. The exact date when the transfer occurred is a little indefinite.

Dixon on Surnames simply says that "the descendants of John Crow changed the name to Crowell."

The gravestone of John, grandson of John Crow, the grantee, is still well preserved in the North Dennis burying ground, and bears the name of Crowell, the date of death being Oct. 15, 1728. From facts like this our chroniclers of Cape Cod genealogy put the change at about the third generation. While this may be true of some branches of the family, others changed the name soon after landing, as the following interesting old will will clearly show:

"To all people to whome this presente shall come I Elverton Crowell alias Crow of Yarmouthe in ye Collony of Plymouth in New England sendste greeting etc:—Know ye that I ye sd Elverton Crowell alias Crow, having at this time through God's great goodness my perfect sense and memory Doe this twenty-third Day of December 1681 make and ordaine this my last will and testament as follows, viz: first I bequeate my soul to God that gave it me & my body to ye duste from whenne it was in Descent buriall and as for my outward estate which ye lord of his goodness hath given me my will is & I Doe constitute, ordaine & appoint my youngest son living sole executor to this my last will and testament and I ye sd Ylverton Crowell Doe give to him my sd son Thomas Crowell alias Crow all my lands houses meadows marshes cattle horses mares swine & household stuffs with whatever estate belongs or any ways appertaines to me the said Yelverton Crowell in Yarmouth or elsewhere to him the said Thomas Crowell his heirs and assignee for ever, my will is also that my sd son Thomas Crowell shall Discharge ye rights of my burial and pay all my full Debts & maintain my loving wife his mother so long as she livst both in healthe & sickness, finding and allowing her whatsoever is or may be needful for comfortable subsistance according to his ability and also my will is that my said

son Thomas Crowell doe pay to my three sons, John, Edward and Samuel five shillings a year in silver money and to my grand child Elizabeth Gifford two coves, two swine of about halfe a year old & one feather bed & Bolster further my will is that in case Thomas my said executor should by any providence of God Dye before my wife his mother & leave no will, then my will is that my estate be improved for her maintainence so long as she lives, otherwise I leave my loving wife to the maintainence of my son Thomas as above said. In witness whereof I ye said Yelverton Crowell alias Crow have hereunto set my hand & seaf ye Day & year above.

“Yelverton Crowell (seal)  
“alias Crow

“John Thacher whoe made oathe here unto at the Court House of Plymouth the 8th of March 1683:84.

“Rebeckah Thacher on ye oath of Mr. John Thacher.”

This will is amongst the oldest documents of similar character on file in the Registry of Deeds at Plymouth, and is interesting for its great age, as we reckon things in this country, its style and the important fact of the maker signing his old as well as his altered name—thereby showing the change of name from Crow to Crowell. It has sometimes been assumed without sufficient evidence that Yelverton Crow was a brother of John, one of the grantees of the town.\*

---

\* Yelverton Crowell who settled on a farm at South Sea, in West Yarmouth, in 1640, died in 1683, and has numerous descendants. They are not recorded in this book.—Ed.

## CROWE OR CROWELL FAMILY.

## I.

JOHN CROWE and Elishua (?) his wife, may have come from Wales. John Crowe or Crowell as the name was later written came to this country and landed in Charlestown in 1635; his wife may have come over before him. He moved to Plymouth in 1638, where he took the oath of fidelity on Dec. 18, 1638. He was granted lands at Yarmouth Jan. 6, 1638/9. He was appointed a member of the land committee of Yarmouth. This office he did not fill so as to please all parties, and Miles Standish was added to the committee to settle the disputes. In 1640 J. Crowe was made a freeman and magistrate of Yarmouth. He died January 14, 1672/3. His wife died 1688.

John Crowe and his wife Elishua \_\_\_\_\_, had the following children:

1. Moses, bapt. June 26, 1637; died young.
2. JOHN, born 1639, married Mehitable Miller, born July 13, 1638, daughter of Rev. John Miller. John Crowe died Jan. 28, 1688/9. His wife died Feb. 23, 1714/15.
3. Thomas, born about 1645; died March 9, 1689/90. Married Agnes \_\_\_\_\_.
4. Elizabeth, married Arthur Perry of Boston (one of the original members of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery.)
5. Elishua, married John Gifford.
6. Samuel \_\_\_\_\_.

## II.

JOHN CROWE, son of John 1st, born about 1639; married Mehitable Miller. He died January 28, 1688-9. She died Feb. 23, 1714-15; born Roxbury, July 13, 1638.

Mr. John Crowe, of Nobscusset, after the death of his father, was called Senior, to distinguish him from John, son of Yelverton Crowe.

Children of John Crowe and Mehitable Miller were:

1. JOHN, born 1662; married Bethia Sears, daughter of Paul Sears.
2. Mehitable, married Thomas Tobey, of Sandwich.
3. Lydia, married Ebenezer Goodspeed, Feb. 15, 1677-8.

4. Jeremiah, born 1670; married Hannah Ryder, Nov. 29, 1705.
5. Elizabeth, married Samuel Matthews.
6. Susannah, born 1666.
7. Hannah, born April 1, 1677; married Joseph Studley, April 12, 1706.

### III.

JOHN CROWELL, of Nobscusset, born 1662; married Bethia Sears May 27, 1684. He died October 15, 1728. She was born June 3, 1661-2; died July 5, 1724. His gravestones were the first in the burying-ground near the meeting-house at North Dennis.

Children of John Crowell and Bethia Sears were:

1. Joseph, born March 20, 1685; married Bethsheba Hall Oct. 27, 1709. Removed to Falmouth.
2. Paul, born April 20, 1687; married 1st Elizabeth Hallett Oct. 21, 1714; married 2nd Margery Hall Feb. 25, 1724-5. Removed to Chatham.
3. BETHIA, born April 13, 1689; died January 2, 1752; married Joseph Atwood, Oct. 12, 1710. (See Atwood Family.)
4. Mehitable, born Sept. 3, 1691; married John Ryder May 20, 1713. Moved to Chatham.
5. John, born July, 1693; married Kezia Eldridge Oct. 23, 1718.
6. Deborah, born July 1, 1695; died January 11, 1705-6.
7. Christopher, born July 24, 1698; married Sarah Matthews Sept 23, 1724.
8. Elizabeth, born Oct. 8, 1700; married Benjamin Homer, Dec. 21, 1721.
9. Mary, born Dec. 25, 1704; married Thomas Bray, Sept. 4, 1723.

#### REFERENCES:

John Crowe and his Descendants, pages 1 to 22.

Freeman's Cape Cod, Vol. II, pages 192, 199, 597.

Genealogical Dictionary of New England, Vol. 1, page 479.

Genealogical Notes of N. Y.

New England Families, by Talcott, page 495.

NOTE: Elishua, wife of John Crowe,—no further information.

(See Atwood Family.)

## DALLY FAMILY.

JAN DALLY (the name is spelled Dalý; Daly, Dally, Daillje, Dealý) was probably the John Dally who died intestate 1691. Letters of administration were granted Nicholas Bayard as principal creditor May 19, 1691. Inventory taken June 9, 1691, shows total value of estate £34; no real estate.

Jan Dally and his wife, Lyspeth Obbe, had the following children, (Lyspeth Obbe was either sister or daughter of Hendrick Obbe, who married Aeltie Claes):

1. Catharine, bapt. Feb. 17, 1669.
2. Marrite, bapt. July 28, 1672.
3. Maria, bapt. March 18, 1674.
4. Hendrick, bapt. April 26, 1676.
5. PHILIPUS, bapt. Dec. 1, 1678, of Staten Island, married Cornelia Van Gelder of N. Y., Oct. 22, 1701.
6. Nicholas, bapt. Oct. 16, 1680; married Elizabeth Cregier (perhaps daughter of Martin Cregier), Aug. 30, 1702.
7. Lydia, bapt. March 8, 1693; married Balthazar Van Benthuisen Feb. 21, 1706. Perhaps there were also the following children:

John, who married Geertruyd Roomen, March 28, 1700-1.

Anna or Hannah, who married Everadus Bogardus June 13, 1704.

Nathan of Staten Island, who married Sarah Huismans of Hackensack April 25, 1706.

PHILIPUS DALLY lived in a house on Little Queen Street, now Cedar. He may have been the ship's carpenter referred to in New York Historical Society Collection, Vol. 1909, as Philip Dalpah, page 171.

Children of Philipus Dally and Cornelia Van Gelder, his wife, were:

1. Johannes, bapt. July 26, 1702; married Margarita Van Sysse, May 22, 1726. Married 2nd Maria Earl ? July 9, 1748.
2. Philip, bapt. Sept. 2, 1705.
3. Joris, bapt. Aug. 31, 1707.
4. Anneke, bapt. May 15, 1709.
5. ANNEKE, bapt. Nov. 1, 1710; married Isaac Stoutenburg Oct. 29, 1733.

(See Stoutenburgh Family.)

6. Elizabeth, bapt. Sept. 14, 1712; married Abraham Braesja (Brasher), brother of Lucas Brasher, Nov. 10, 1734. She married 2nd John Bogart, Jr., July 7, 1781?
7. Marytja, bapt. April 17, 1715; married Robert Roberts Nov. 12, 1734.
8. Cornelia, bapt. Aug. 5, 1716.
9. Cornelia, bapt. March 2, 1718; married John Kip Oct. 25, 1740. He died before Feb. 22, 1746. She married 2nd Tobias Ryckman Nov. 9, 1749.
10. Maria, bapt. Jan. 15, 1721; married John La Montagne March 14, 1741. He was born 1710 and died 1794.
11. Abraham, bapt. Aug. 22, 1725.

## REFERENCES:

- N. Y. Genealogical & Biographical Society Collections, Births, Vol. I.  
 Genealogical Notes. New England and N. Y. Families by Talcott, page 48.  
 Ricker's Harlem, 452, 456, 788.  
 New York Historical Society Collections, Wills, Vol. I, pages 183-5; Vol. II, page 149.  
 (See Stoutenburgh Family.)

## DOYON FAMILY.

JEAN DOYON was baptized 1619. He was the son of Jacques Doyon and Francoise Courturier of pays d'Aunis, France. He was buried April 27, 1664, at Chateau-Richer. The records say he died like a saint. He married Marthe Gagnon Nov. 19, 1650 at Quebec. She married 2nd Jacques Francois Lesot.

Their children were :

1. Marie, bapt. March 25, 1652; married February 9, 1666, Antoine Lefort; she was buried 1677.
2. NICOLAS, bapt. March 18, 1654; married January 8, 1690, Genevieve Guyon Du Buisson; he was buried March 7, 1715; she died 1734.
3. Antoine, bapt. July 4, 1656.
4. Madeleine, bapt. 1659; married 1676, Francois Bauliard.
5. Antoine, bapt. Feb. 20, 1662; married February 11, 1686, Francoise Cloutier; he died December 9, 1708.
6. Thomas, bapt. August 31, 1664; married January 28, 1692, Barbe Trepagny.

NICHOLAS DOYON, son of Jean Doyon and Marthe Gagnon, his wife, was baptized March 18, 1654. He married January 8, 1690, at Chateau-Richer, Genevieve Guyon. He was buried at Quebec March 7, 1715. She was buried May 3, 1734. He seems to have been a soldier as he is called Arquebusier.

The children of Nicholas Doyon and Genevieve Guyon were :

1. Jean, bapt. April 23, 1691.
2. Anonyme, bapt. and buried May 3, 1692.
3. Nicholas, bapt. June 30 and buried Sept. 12, 1693.
4. Ignace Prisque, bapt. July 30 and buried Aug. 30, 1694.
5. Genevieve, bapt. Sept. 6, 1695; married 1st Oct. 12, 1716, Charles Hedouin; married 2nd, Jan. 19, 1726, Francois Moreau; buried Oct. 20, 1763.
6. Marie Charlotte, bapt. September 1, 1696; buried January 30, 1700.
7. Marguerite, bapt. March 13, 1699; married February 2, 1732 Francois Crevalier.

8. Charles, bapt. March 4 and buried March 20, 1701.
9. Marie Angelique, bapt. March 31 and buried April 10, 1702.
10. LOUISE, bapt. June 3, 1703; married October 8, 1721, Jean Baudry. (See Baudry Family.)
11. Nicolas, bapt. May 14, 1705.
12. Louis, bapt. August 22, and buried October 4, 1707.
13. Marie Charlotte, bapt. September 11, 1708 and buried January 14, 1731.
14. Elizabeth, bapt. July 28, and buried August 10, 1712.

## REFERENCES :

Dictionnaire Genealogique Des Familles Canadienne, Vol. I, page 199.

Jean Guyon; etude Genealogique, page 103.

(See Baudry Family.)

## DOW FAMILY.

The will of GARRETT DOW, on file in the office of the Surrogate of the City of New York, reads as follows:

“In the name of God, Amen. I, Gerard Dow, late of the island of St. Christophers, Planter, being infirm and weak. I leave all estate to my wife Allettie and make her sole executor; with power to give to the children whatever she shall see fit, during her widowhood. But if she shall marry again then one-half of the estate is to be divided among my son Jacobus Dow, my daughter Sarah, the children of my daughter Johanna, deceased, my daughter Mary, and my daughter Allettie. And in case my wife should marry again, I make my friends, \_\_\_\_\_ Carpenter, Esq., John Popham, my brother-in-law, and Mr. Wm. Stead, and Mr. James Bisse, overseers.

“Dated July 7, 1689. Witness, P. Schaexer, N. Vignon, Aaron Chapman, Ebenezer Kyrtland. Proved before Lord Cornbury, and the witnesses to the said will, beyond seas, being dead, Samuel Claves, of Jamaica on Long Island, makes oath to the handwriting of the said Gerritt Dow. And the widow, Allettie Dow, is confirmed as executor, July 9, 1704.”

## REFERENCE:

N. Y. Historical Society, Collections 1892, Abstracts of Wills Vol. I, pages 406-7.

(See Vickers Family.)

## DUNHAM FAMILY.

JOHN DUNHAM was born in 1588-9 at Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, England. He married Abigail Wood October 17, 1619, at Leyden, Holland. There is a supposition that he was the John Goodman who came over on the Mayflower, he having taken that name to disguise his own personality for unknown reason, John Goodman being shown as dying during the first winter to cover up this deception. All this is interesting, but never has been definitely proven.

John Dunham became Deacon shortly after 1639. His house was on Watson's Hill, Plymouth and southwest of the village.

He had the following children, all of whom were born in the Colony, except his oldest son John:

1. John, born 1620 in Leyden, Holland. He married March 14, 1643, Dorothy \_\_\_\_\_ of Boston.
2. ABIGAIL, the first child born in Plymouth. She was born in 1623; married Stephen Wood, or (Atwood) of Eastham, Mass., Nov. 6, 1644. (See Atwood Family.)
3. Thomas, born in 1626; married 1646 Martha Knott. Will dated April 2, 1705.
4. Samuel, born 1628; married Mrs. Martha Fallowell June 29, 1649. Married 2nd, Mary Watson, widow.
5. Hannah, born in 1630; married Giles Richard Oct. 31, 1651; she died before May 20, 1662.
6. Jonathan, born in 1632; married Nov. 29, 1655 Mary De La Noye, daughter of Philip De La Noye; married 2nd, on October 15, 1657 Mary Cobb; he died on December 18, 1717.
7. Persis, born 1635. She married 1st, Benajah Pratt November 29, 1655; married 2nd, Jonathan Shaw Oct. 15, 1657. She died in 1672.
8. Joseph, born in 1636; married Mercy Morton, daughter of Nathaniel Morton, on Nov. 18, 1657. She died February 19, 1667. He married 2nd, August 20, 1669, Hester Worrnall, daughter of Joseph Worrnall.
9. Benjamin, born in 1637; married Mary Tilson Oct. 25, 1660.

10. Daniel, born 1639; married Mehitable Hayward about 1670.  
He died in Dorchester.
11. Benajah, born 1640; married Elizabeth Tilson of Scituate  
Oct. 25, 1660. He died in New Jersey Dec. 24, 1680.

## REFERENCES :

Dunham Genealogy, pages 1 to 12.  
(See Attwood Family.)

## DUNSTER FAMILY.

DOROTHY DUNSTER was the daughter of Henry Dunster and his wife, Elizabeth ————— of Baleholt, near Bury, Lancaster, England. She was the sister or niece of Elizabeth Dunster who married Simon Willard (see Willard Manuscript 1858, page 339.) She was probably the wife of George Willard and removed to Maryland with him later.

## REFERENCES :

Sears Genealogy, page 44.  
(See Willard Family.)

## EDSALL FAMILY.

SAMUEL EDSALL was born in Reading, Berkshire, England. He was a hatter by trade. He came to this country in the ship Tryall, John Graves, Master, landing in Boston, July, 1648. In 1655 he moved to New York and built a house on Pearl Street, near the river, where he carried on his trade as hatter and buyer of beaver skins. The trade in beavers brought him in contact with the Indians, from whom he bought large tracts of land in New York and New Jersey. We find him often acting as interpreter.

In 1657 he was admitted a small burgher in New Amsterdam, and in 1664 took the oath of allegiance in New York to the English. In 1664 he owned and resided on a farm at Constable Hook, Bergen, N. J., (as per page 137 of Vol I, of Raum's N. J.) to which place he probably removed from Newtown, L. I. In 1668 he was a member of the Council of Gov. Carteret; in 1677 he was taxed in N. Y., and in 1687 a justice of the peace in Queens Co. Oct. 1, 1690, he was commissioned a justice of the peace of Kings Co., as per Colonial Manuscripts.

Under the Dutch rule as well as the English he held many positions of importance in the government. In Leisler's time he was a member of the council, and when Leisler was hung for treason he was also tried for the same offense but acquitted. His chief purchases of land were Constables Hook, N. J.; Bronck's Land (Morrisania), Senckhican's Island in the Delaware, Elizabeth Town, N. J., and Newark, also Bergen, N. J. The latter part of his life was spent in Newtown, L. I., where he died some time between 1701-6. His matrimonial ventures were many.

Samuel Edsall, married first on May 29, 1655, Jennetje Wessels of Arnheim in Gelderland. She was a belle of that day, the daughter of Wessell Wessells and Metje Boonen Wessells. Her mother ran the first public house in New Amsterdam, her husband having died and she being a widow. The children of Samuel Edsall and his wife, Jannetje Wessells were:

1. Annetje, bapt. July 12, 1656; married Capt. William Lawrence.
2. JUDITH, bapt. May 15, 1658; married Benjamin Blagge of Plymouth, England, about 1680. She died about September 1702. (See Blagge Family.)

3. Johannes, bapt. Sept. 12, 1660; lived in Bergen, N. J.
4. Joanna, bapt. in Bergen; Sept. 4, 1677, married Jacob Milborne. Milborne married second, Mary Leisler.
5. Sarah, died young.
6. Benjamin, died young.
7. Mary, married Peter De La Noy. License dated February 21, 1695-6. He died in 1696. Will dated Sept. 2, proved Nov. 20.
8. Elizabeth, married Peter Berrien, Aug. 10, 1706.  
By his second wife, Naomy Moore, he probably had no children. She was the widow of Sam Moore.  
By his third wife, Ruth Woodhull, he probably had :
  9. Richard, (who signed his name Samuel Edsall). He married Kezia Ketcham.
10. Ruth, married John Berrien.  
By his fourth wife, Jennetie (Stryker) Berrien, he had no children.

## REFERENCES :

- Riker's History of Newtown.  
 N. Y. Genealogical & Biographical Record, Vol. I, page 25; Vol. 13, page 191; Vol. 22, page 27.  
 Early Settlers of Kings County, pages 106, 107.  
 Mrs. Lamb's History of N. Y., Vol. I, page 371.  
 N. Y. Historical Society Collections, 1892, page 262.  
 Dutch Church Baptisms, Vol. I, pages 42, 49, 57.  
 Stokes' Iconography, Vol. I, pages 130, 288; Vol. II, pages 234, 235, 268, 369, 385, 386, 388.  
 Copy of Berrien Bible in Stuyvesant Fish's scrap book, Nathaniel Fish's family record therein.  
 (See Blagge Family.)

## EDMUND FREEMAN.

## I

This is not a Barnstable name. It is a common name in the County, and several families of the name were early of Barnstable. Two of the name came to this County. Edmund of Lynn, who was one of the first settlers in Sandwich, and Samuel of Watertown, who settled in Eastham.

Edmund was a prominent man of good business habits, liberal in politics and tolerant in his religious opinions. He was a member of the Sandwich Church—the most bigoted and intolerant in the Colony—yet he did not imbibe the persecuting spirit which has condemned to everlasting infamy many of his brethren.

A memorable circumstance, significant of the infatuations that marked this critical period, is the fact that, after the notorious Geo. Barlow had been appointed by Government a special marshal to enforce the laws against offending Quakers "*and their encouragers,*" Barlow, well knowing Mr. Freeman's disapprobation of these measures, had the audacity to call upon him for "*aid.*" Promptly and indignantly refused, Barlow entered complaint at Plymouth; and, whether as a show of deference to enactments or for a feint of consistency, a *fine* of ten shillings was imposed! Self-respect, doubtless, forbade a murmuring word. Reticence is, on such occasions, the only manly and truly Christian revenge. Time sobers reflection. Even Doctor Cotton Mather came at last to be of Mr. Freeman's views, saying of the course adopted to suppress a seeming infatuation, "If any man will appear in vindication of it, let him do as he pleases: for my part, I will not."

Gov. Hutchinson's History makes prominent mention of Mr. Freeman and fifteen others, as "the founders of the Colony of New Plymouth, the settlement of which Colony occasioned the settlement of Massachusetts Bay, which was the source of all the other Colonies of New England." It adds, "Virginia was in a dying state, and seemed to revive and flourish from the example of New England." It continues, "I am not preserving from oblivion the names of heroes whose chief merit is the overthrow of cities, provinces, and empires; but the names of the founders of a flourishing town and colony, if not the whole British empire in America."

In his intercourse with his neighbors and associates, he was affable and obliging, and to his kindred and intimate friends, he was ever kind and affectionate. He rested from his labors at Sandwich in 1682, at the ripe old age of 92 years. His wife died Feb. 14, 1676, aged 76. She was buried on a rising ground on his own farm. He was then 86 and had lived 59 years in the married state. Some little time after her decease he summoned together his sons and his grandsons, they placed a large flat rock resembling a pillion, over the grave of the wife. He then placed another, resembling in shape a saddle, beside it; and addressing his sons, he said: "when I die, place my body under that stone, your mother and I have travelled many long years together in this world, and I desire that our bodies rest here till the resurrection, and I charge you to keep this spot sacred, and that you enjoin it upon your children and your children's children, that they never desecrate this spot."

A substantial wall was built around these simple but suggestive monuments, and his descendants to this day with pious hands protect them from desecration. Many of them regard this spot as their Mecca, which it is their duty to visit at least once in their lives.

The entries at the London Custom are not entirely reliable. In one place it is stated that he was 34 in 1635, and in another 45 years of age. The latter is assumed to be accurate, because it is not probable that he married at 16. His son John was born in 1622. The Custom House records say in 1626, also in 1627. The family came over in 1635 in the ship *Abigail*, Capt. Hackwell.

The question who was the WIFE of Edmund Freeman, sen., has led to a variety of conjecture. It has sometimes been supposed she may have been a *Bennet*; but for no other reason than that her daughter Elizabeth Ellis named her first-born Bennet, and her son John named one of his children Bennett,—occurrences that naturally suggest a possible reason for the introduction of a surname for a Christian name. The custom, a genealogist well understands, was not infrequent in those days; the mother's maiden name being selected for at least one of the sons, or perhaps grandsons. It has been conjectured also that her name was *Beauchampe*; the reason for which supposition is founded alone on correspondence that does not necessarily imply it.\* Mrs. Freeman

---

\* The letter to which reference is made is to Mr. Freeman's son-in-law; and, together with the remarks of the custodian of Old Colony Records who copied it, is as follows:—

may have been a sister of Beauchamp; or B. may have married Mr. Freeman's sister; or Mrs. F. and Mrs. B. may have been sisters, their maiden name still undivulged.

His Will bears date June 21, and was presented for probate Nov. 2, 1682. The following is the authenticated record:—

“THE LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF MR. EDMOND FREEMAN, SENIOR, exhibited to the Court of his Majestie, held at Plymouth the 2d of Nov. 1682, on the oaths of John Fish and Nathan Nye, as followeth:—

“The 21 day of June, in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred eighty-and two, I EDMOND FREEMAN, *the eldest of the name in Sandwiche*, being in a good measure in health of body, and of capable understanding and memory, do declare this to be

“LONDON, the 20th July, 1649.

“COUSIN WILLIAM PADDY.

“Loving Cousin, Your health desired, with your wife's and all yours, with the rest of our friends.

“Cousin, my son Dogget sent some cloth and bibles to you, and desires you to put to sale, and to make return in corn and wheat, rye, pease, barley, and oats, at as reasonable rate as you can get it, by the first.

“Cousin, I pray you tell your father, my brother Freeman, that I have received the box of writings he sent with the letter of attorney, and other writings to give to my bro. Coddington for his discharge, which I gave him, and my bro. William Freeman did make his account, and he paid me as followeth: first he paid me for goods sent you about five years since as I remember, £11.10; about five years since he paid for a bill of exchange £12; and he hath paid to me in moneys £196.10; more he is yet to pay, and doth promise to pay Sept. next £24, = £244. Mrs. Woodman's I cannot as yet make any end with them.

“I pray you remember my love to your wife and all the rest. We are all in health still, blessed be God; the wife's mother is in good health, and lives with me at Ryegate.

“The ship was going from Gravesend, and by chance I met with one going down to Gravesend, which makes me write in haste at a shop where I met him in London, and have write in great haste. I end and rest.

“Your Loving Cousin JOHN BEACHAMPE.

“To my Loving Cousin Mr. William Paddy, merchant in Plymouth.”

The “bro. Coddington” mentioned in Mr. B.'s letter was, without doubt, *William Coddington*, the grantee of Braintree, in whom were early discoverable Quaker affinities, and who was conspicuous in Rhode Island. It was quite natural that there should be found sympathy of thought between him and his brother-in-law Mr. Freeman, when the Quaker troubles arose.

Mr. Russell, the custodian, says, “The name Beachampe is sometimes spelt Beauchamp. Mr. B. was among the ‘merchant adventurers,’ and a decided and valuable friend of the Colony. The letter may throw some light on the relationship of our early ancestors. It shows the family connection between him and Mr. Paddy, which is nowhere else found that I know of. There are many deeds of Edm. Freeman to others, and other documents showing him to have been Mr. B.'s agent.”

my last will and testament; hereby renouncing and making void all other and former wills and testaments made by me, the said Edmond Freeman, by my knowledge or privity.

“Item. First, I make, constitute, and ordain my three Sons, namely, my son Edmond Freeman, and my son John Freeman, and Edward Perry, to be my executors, and my Daughter Elizabeth Ellis, executrix, of this my last will and testament.

“Item. My will is that all former conveyances of lands by me given shall stand and remain in full force and virtue.

“Item. For the disposing of my estate, my just debts being first paid, I do give unto my two sons, namely, my son Edmond and my son John Freeman, all my lands on the easterly side of the lands given by me to my Grandson Matthias Ellis, on the same range to run as the said Matthias his land doth, from the northeast corner-bound of said land unto the northerly end of all my land, only provided and excepted that land which is called the Rye-field, and the meadow which is called Hedges-meadow, the which said Rye-field and Hedges-meadow, I do give to my Grandson Thomas Paddy.

“Item. My lands which are to the westward and to the northward of my grandson Matthias Ellis his land by me given to him, all my said westward and northward lands to be divided into three parts; and two of said three parts I do give unto my son Edward Perry, and the other said third part I do give unto my daughter Elizabeth Ellis, all which aforesaid given lands I do freely give unto my aforesaid sons and daughter, to them and their heirs and assigns, to have and to hold forever. Furthermore, the one-half of my lands at Waquanchett, I give unto my grandson Thomas Paddy, to him and his heirs and assigns forever.

“This is my last will and testament.

“By me,

“EDMOND FREEMAN. [Seal]

“Signed, sealed, and delivered  
in presence of us,

JOHN FISH, his X mark.

NATHAN NYE, his X mark.”

“PLYMOUTH ss., March 1, 1851.

“The foregoing is a true copy from the Old Colony Records, vol. iv. of Wills, part 2, p. 5.

Attest:

WM. S. RUSSELL,

*Register of Deeds, and Keeper of the O. C. Records.”*

It is evident that our Ancestor's chief arrangements in regard to his worldly property were made some years previous to the execution of the preceding WILL. His children had severally shared in his estate; and in 1678 a deed of gift vested in his grandson, Matthias Ellis, valuable property including the dwelling-house, in consideration of natural love and affection and service rendered.\*

Our venerable and honored Sire was buried on his own land on the hill in rear of his dwelling.

"This was the estate that was sett forth by Elizabeth Ellis of her father Mr. Edmund Freeman.

"ELKANAH CUSHMAN.  
JOHN RANDALL.

"Sum of the estate of Mr. Edmond Freeman of Sandwich, late deceased, remaining att Sandwich, inventoried by us whose names are underwritten this 22 of Oct.

Item. One gunn.....	£0 1 0	Item. For all the land at his	
" One trunke, & 1 hand		late dwelling that he	
saw .....	4 0	was possessed off	
" One steer of 3 yrs. &		att his decease.....	£150 0 0
vantage .....	2 0 0	" Lands att Weequansitt	5 0
" One steere of 1 yr. &			
vantage .....	1 0 0	The total is.....	161 0 0
" One flaggan & iron		On the other side.	29 8 10
crow .....	11 0		
	<hr/>		
" Some more lumber			
found in the old			
house .....	10 0		
" One double Silver			
salt-cellar .....	5 10 0		
Item. Debts due from the estate that now appear att Boston.	£4 7 8		
" To Mikael Blackwell att Sandwich.....	2 0 0		
" To Mr. Bourne.....	5 3 0		

"The X mark of THOMAS BURGE, Senr.  
The mark of MIKAELL BLACKWELL.

"Mr. Edmond Freeman and Capt. John Freeman made oath to this Inventory att the Court att Plym., Nov. 2, 1682."

---

\* To guard against future misapprehension, it may be proper here to note that Mr. Freeman's *first* and earlier residence in town was undoubtedly in the easterly part of Sandwich; and the exact location is indicated by a deed from him dated "1st mo., 5th, 1671," to "William Allen," witnessed by "Edw. Perry, Mary Perry, and Margaret Freeman." A part of that old mansion is yet standing; and Quakers have prided themselves in pointing to the ancient edifice as the first in which "*Friends' Meetings*" were publicly held in Sandwich.

“PLYMOUTH ss., April 3, 1851.

“A true copy from the Old Colony Records, Book of Wills, vol. iv. part 2, p. 6.                    Attest                    WM. S. RUSSELL,  
*Register of Deeds, and Keeper of said Records.*”

Curiosity, at least, may be interested in the following document; and we therefore insert it *verbatim et literatim*:—

“An Inventory of the estate of Edmond Freeman, late of Sandwich, deceased, taken by us whose names are underwritten, the fourth of Oct., 1682, at New Oxford.

Item. Some old clothing....	£0 14 0	Item. One brasse kettell....	£ 8 0
“ Three pewter dishes..	9 0	“ One old belmettle skil-	
“ Five pewter plates....	1 0	lett .....	1 0
“ One pewter sistern...	3 0	“ One belmettle skillett.	10 0
“ A pr. Old Holland		“ One iron pott & hookes	8 0
sheets .....	12 0	“ One pott hanger.....	2 0
“ Six table-napkins, and		“ One gt. brasse kettell	
two pillow coats....	12 0	with't baile .....	1 11 0
“ Two capps & two		“ One brasse pan.....	10 0
bands .....	3 0	“ One gt. Winscott	
“ One sheet.....	5 0	chest .....	1 0 0
“ Two Diaper table		“ One desk.....	4 0
clothes .....	16 0	“ One cherne, 6 trayes,	
“ One trunke.....	2 0	1 bell, and other	
“ One Belmettle mortar		lumber .....	8 0
& pestle.....	7 0	“ One earthen pott....	1 0
“ One Silver bason....	8 0 0	“ One suite of curtaines	
“ One Silver tankard...	4 0 0	& vallence, & 3 cur-	
“ One Silver-Spoone....	8 0	taine rodde.....	15 0
“ One Silke cushen....	2 0	“ Two hatt-brushes ....	1 0
“ One coverlidd.....	5 0	“ One dixionary & gt.	
“ One feather bed &		Bible .....	1 15 0
bolster .....	3 8 0	“ One old Copper pan,	
“ One feather bed bol-		and 1 earthen bottle	2 10
ster, blanket, rugg,			
2 pillowes, & 1 car-			
pett .....	3 4 0		
			29 8 10

It may gratify some descendant of the venerated patriach, to know the tenor of the conveyance to Mr. Ellis, and we therefore present a copy:—

“Know all men by these presents that I, Edmond Freeman the eldest, of Sandwich, in the Colony of New Plym., being in the confines of America, called New England; for and in consideration of the natural love and affection which I bear to the said Matthias Ellis, being my kinsman in blood, that is to say my grandson; and for diverse other good causes and considerations, as living with me until he the abovesaid Matthias came unto man's estate, being a support unto me in my old age and weakness:

Wherefore, I the said Edmond Freeman at this present do alienate, give, and grant, enfeoff and confirm, unto the aforesaid Matthias Ellis, his heirs and assigns, all that my now Dwelling House and Orchard, situate and being in Sandwich aforesaid, with one quarter part of my lands belonging and adjoining thereunto, both upland and meadow, the upland being by estimation thirty acres, be it more or less,—the upland being bounded on the western side at the corner of the Old Field, having a red-oak tree marked on four sides; and so ranging downward northeasterly until it comes to the meadow; and from the aforementioned marked tree ranging upward by a southwesterly line until it comes to the cross-street way; and so ranging easterly unto a Rock near the aforementioned dwelling-house, with a marked small pole near unto the Rock; and so to range upon the southwesterly line to the old fence, unto a bush marked; and from the aforesaid Rock ranging northeasterly to the Marsh. It is to be understood that the breadth of this land by the cartway in the cross-street way is to be the breadth that it is from the forementioned Red-oak marked on four sides, unto the forementioned Rock; and likewise to be the same breadth at the Marsh as it is betwixt the marked tree and the Rock aforesaid; and for the aforesaid meadow, it is an entire piece of meadow of and by itself, being bounded by the Earthen cartway that goeth into the Neck, and so bounded by a Ditch called the Divell's Ditch, and further bounded by a point of upland that extendeth to the aforesaid Ditch, having a little Run of Water running through the meadow with the swamps that are adjoining; with all and singular the appurtenances belonging thereunto, with the now dwelling-house, fences, and other privileges and appurtenances thereunto belonging; and furthermore, one quarter part of the land and meadow in the Neck, the which is adjoining the aforementioned premises, the upland being by estimation twenty acres, be it more or less; bounded upon the northeasterly corner with a heap of stones and a forked small walnut pole by the stones; and so ranging from the aforesaid heap of stones and forked walnut unto a great Rock that lyeth easterly of Joseph Dotey's house, and from the aforesaid Rock to the cart-way that is by Kerby's Field; and the cart-way to be the bounds until it comes to the Earthen Bridge, and to range to the fence of Michael Blackwell's meadow; and so from the aforesaid fence unto a point of upland lying over

against the mouth of a Creek on the further side of the River, the which Creek divideth betwixt the meadow of Wm. Swift, Sr., and Thos. Gibbs, Sr., and so from the forementioned point; ranging about southeast along under Sagamore Hill near and unto which Hill there is a great Rock like the ridge of a house; and so ranging unto the aforementioned forked walnut and heap of stones; and for the Marsh meadow adjoining the aforesaid upland in the Neck; being by estimation twelve acres, be it more or less, bounded upon the southwest by the fence of Michael Blackwell's meadow; and bounded by the River all along upon the western side until it comes to the point of upland aforesaid, and the range running to the aforesaid mouth of the Creek that divideth betwixt the meadows of Wm. Swift and Thos. Gibbs aforesaid. All which the aforesaid premises, of the House, with the greater part of the land and meadow adjoining the House, be it more or less, with the greater part of the land and meadow lying in the Neck, being more or less; according as it is particularly bounded, both that adjoining to the house, and also the land in the Neck; all which the forementioned parts and parcels of land and meadow with all the appurtenances and privileges thereunto belonging, in any kind, according to the forementioned extent of the bounds, both upland and meadow, with orchard and orchards, edifices, or whatever the appurtenances, benefits, easements thereunto belonging,—I, the aforesaid Edmond Freeman, do for myself, my heirs, executors, and administrators, by these presents, alienate from myself, my heirs, and executors, and do give, grant, and confirm and enfeoff, and by these presents do fully and absolutely alienate, give, grant, and confirm, unto the aforesaid Matthias Ellis, his heirs and assigns: To HAVE and to HOLD all the aforementioned premises of housing, lands, and meadowlands, unto the only proper use and benefit and behoof of the aforesaid Matthias Ellis, his heirs and assigns forever. And I, the aforesaid Edmond Freeman, do by these PRESENTS order that the aforesaid Matthias Ellis shall be fully and absolutely possessed of the before mentioned premises and every part and parcel thereof, when it shall please GOD to take me, the aforesaid Edmond Freeman, out of this natural life;—And likewise the aforesaid Matthias Ellis shall have liberty to improve and enjoy the aforementioned premises for his own proper inheritance forever, with whatsoever privileges and appurtenances thereunto belongeth, when my days in this life are expired. And I, the

aforesaid Edmond Freeman, do fully and absolutely ratify and confirm this my DEED GIFT unto the aforesaid MATTHIAS ELLIS, his heirs and assigns forever. Witness my hand and seal, this twenty-fourth day of February, in the year One thousand six hundred and seventy and eight.

“EDMOND FREEMAN, *eldest*. [Seal]

“Signed, sealed, and delivered in presence of us the witnesses:

RICHARD BOURNE,  
SAMUEL EADY,  
JOSEPH DOTEY.

“Mr. Edmond Freeman, the eldest, within the above mentioned, appeared this third day of March, 1678, and acknowledged these PRESENTS to be his free act and deed, before me,

“THOMAS HINCKLEY, *Assistant*.”

“PLYMOUTH ss., April 4, 1851.

“The foregoing is a true copy from the Old Colony Records, Book of Deeds, vol. v. pp. 169, 170.

Attest: WM. S. RUSSELL,  
*Register of Deeds, and Keeper of said Records.*”

Children of Edmond Freeman and his wife, Elizabeth (?) were:

1. Alice, born in England, married Deacon William Paddy, Nov. 24, 1639.
2. Edmund, born in England, married Rebecca Prence, April 22, 1646; married 2nd Margaret Perry, July 18, 1651. He died March 29, 1673. Mr. Freeman's second wife, Margaret,—the former wife having died soon after giving birth to her only child,—may have survived her husband. They resided in Sandwich; but the date of her decease we are unable to state.
3. Elizabeth, born in England about 1625; married John Ellis.
4. JOHN, born in England in 1627; married February 13, 1649/50, Mercy, daughter of Gov. Prence. He died Oct. 28, 1719. She died Sept. 28, 1711.
5. Mary, married Edward Perry about 1653.

REFERENCE:

Genealogical Notes of Barnstable Families, Vol. I-II, pages 385-386.

II. MAJOR JOHN FREEMAN, frequently mentioned in the public records, first as "Lt.," subsequently as "Capt.," and later as "MAJOR," and who married a daughter of Gov. Prence, was resident in Sandwich. He probably remained, either just before or after marriage, only a few years. Dec. 30, 1649-50, Jonathan Fish of S. deeded to him lands at "Skauton Neck in S., called by the Indians Arquidneck;" also, same date, Thomas Dexter conveyed to him "lands at Ploughed, or Skauton Neck, next to the lands of Edmond Freeman, Sr., Gent., said lands formerly belonging to Edward Wallaston, late inhabitant of Sandwich." A few years after, removed to Eastham, he is mentioned in records as "among the earliest settlers, with Gov. Prence." He was somewhat conspicuous in the military, doing service in the Indian wars. Through life he was a large landholder. In 1676 the sachem of Satucket, now West Brewster, conveyed to him, i. e. "John, Sr., of E.," certain lands; and these were re-conveyed by him, in 1696, to his son John of Harwich. In 1691 "the town of Eastham mortgaged to Mr. John Freeman two islands as security for the payment of £76, it being the town's proportion of the expenses of obtaining the new charter from England." In 1695 another deed from him was made of "lands which belonged to my father Prence and Bradford,—lands which belonged to their purchase-grant." Major Freeman was many years prominent in public affairs, and has to this day been regarded as "one of the fathers of Eastham." He was Deputy, from 1654, eight years; Selectman, from 1663, ten years; Assistant in the Government, from 1666, several years; and late in life, Dec. 7, 1692, was appointed to the Bench of the Court of Common Pleas. Through a long course of years he was a Deacon of the Eastham Church.

Major Freeman's wife Mercy died Sept. 28, 1711, aged 80. He died Oct. 28, 1719, aged 92. In the graveyard in Eastham is a headstone saying, "Here lies the body of Maj. John Freeman who died Oct. 28, 1719, in the 98th year of his age." By the side of this is another, saying, "Here lies buried the body of Mercy Freeman, wife to Maj. John Freeman, who died Sept. 28, 1711, aged 80." The *age* on the first tablet is, we are confident, a mistake,—perhaps the error of the stone-cutter, but in any event an error in computation.

Owing to the early demise of several of the numerous family of Major John Freeman, they are not all individually mentioned

in his will; which circumstance, together with the imperfect condition of the public records has led to mistakes on the part of some who have aspired to the solution of genealogical difficulties; and their fancies have led to complications, making confusion worse confounded. A diligent student will, however, find all things explicable. The will of Major Freeman bears date June 1, 1716, and was probated Nov. 4, 1719. It mentions the "eldest son," then living, "executor;" and also "son Edmd.; Nathaniel, youngest son;" g.-s. Wm.; sons John Mayo and Jno. Paine; drs. Mary Knowles, Hannah Mayo, Patie. Paine, Rebecca Freeman wid. of Thomas, and g.-dr. Lydia Godfrey. The will provides "freedom for my Negroes," with "four acres of land, a horse, and a cow;" and, showing commendable regard for the comfort of the emancipated, says, "I desire my children to put them in such way that they may not want." An "agreement of heirs" is on record, signed Jan. 29, 1719-20, by "John, Nathl., Samuel, and Mary Knowles, Jno. and Hannah Mayo, Patie, Paine, John Paine, Sarah Freeman widow of Edmd., Isaac eldest son of Edmd., Thos. Gross for Experience dr. of Edmd., Isaac Doane for Ruth dr. of Edmd., Saml. Hinckley for Mary dr. of Edmd., Ebenezer s. of Edmd., Jona. Snow for Thankful dr. of Edmd., Thos. Cobb for Mercy dr. of Edmd., Isaac Pepper for Elizabeth dr. of Edmd., and by Daniel Cole."

Children of Major John Freeman and Mercy Prence were:

1. John, b. Feb. 2, 1650; d. inft.
2. John, b. Dec. 1651, in Eastham; m. Sarah Merrick, dr. of Wm., Dec. 18, 1672, and 2d, "Mrs. Mercy Watson, wid. of Elkanah of Plym.," 1701.
3. Thomas, b. Sept. 1653; m. Rebecca Sparrow, dr. of Jonathan, Esq., Dec. 31, 1673.
4. Patience; m. Lt. Samuel Paine, Jan. 31, 1682-83.
5. Hannah; m. John Mayo, April 14, 1681.
6. EDMUND, b. June, 1657; m. prob. Ruth Merrick, dr. of Wm.; and 2d, Sarah Mayo, dr. of Samuel.
7. Mercy, b. July, 1659; m. Samuel Knowles, Dec. 1679.
8. William, b. abt. 1660; m. Lydia Sparrow, dr. of Jno., abt. 1684-5.
9. Prince, b. Feb. 3, 1665-6; d. young.

10. Nathaniel, b. March 20, 1669, "youngest son;" m. Mary, abt. 1690.
11. Bennet, b. March 7, 1670-1; m. Dea. John Paine of Eastham, March 14, 1689.

III. LIEUT. EDMUND FREEMAN d. Dec. 10, 1717. He resided in Eastham, in that part called Tonset; was a man of distinction, and many years selectman of Eastham. It is not possible to determine with absolute certainty the order of the nativity of his family. The imperfect condition of municipal records, together with the fact that there were several of the name nearly contemporary, has sometimes made it difficult for novitiates to discriminate, and has led to confusion in their genealogical offerings. There is no question that Lieut. Freeman's wife was Sarah, and that she was dr. of Samuel Mayo. Letters of adm. were granted to "Sarah, widow; and Isaac, eldest son, Feb. 25, 1717-18;" and mention is made in probate of "three sons and nine drs." In the final settlement Feb. 12, 1718-19, appear the names of "Isaac, Ebenezer, Edmund," sons; and of the drs., "Ruth Doane, Sarah Higgins, Mary Hinckley, Experience Gross, Mercy Cobb, Thankful Snow, Elizabeth Pepper, Hannah Remick, and Rachel Freeman." Moreover, the will of "Mrs. Sarah Freeman, the widow of Lieut. Edmund Freeman," March 26, 1736-7, probated March 5, 1745, mentions "my six daughters, Thankful Snow, Mary Hinckley, Mercy Cobb, Hannah Remick, Rachel Gray, Sarah Higgins; and my son Edmund, and the chn. of my son Isaac, dec."

However it seems likely that Lieut. Edmund Freeman was married twice, first to Ruth Merrick, daughter of William Merrick; second he married Sarah Mayo:

Children of Edmund Freeman and Ruth Merrick:

1. Ruth, born abt. 1680; m. Isaac Doane.

Children of Edmund Freeman and Sarah Mayo:

2. Sarah; m. Benjamin Higgins, s. of Benj. of Harwich, May 22, 1701.
3. Mary; m. Samuel Hinckley of Harwich, abt. 1703.
4. Isaac, "eldest son;" m. Bethiah Sturgis of Yarm., March 16, 1715-16.
5. Ebenezer; m. Abigail Young, Oct. 12, 1710.
6. Edmund; m. Lois Paine, April 22, 1725; and 2d, Sarah Sparrow, Sept. 25, 1729.

7. Experience; m. Thomas Gross.
8. Mercy; m. Thomas Cobb of Eastham, Oct. 14, 1717.
9. Thankful; m. Jonathan Snow, Oct. 16, 1718.
10. Elizabeth; m. Isaac Pepper.
11. HANNAH, b. 1698; m. Christian Remick, Oct. 10, 1717. ( See Remick Family.)
12. Rachel; m. Thomas Gray of Harwich, Oct. 2, 1729.

IV. HANNAH FREEMAN, born 1698; died July 7, 1751, æ 53. Her husband was probably son of Abraham Remick of Eastham.

The children of Hannah Freeman, who married Christian Remick, were:

1. Mercy, b. Nov. 30, 1718, in Eastham.
2. Hannah, b. March 21, 1720-1.
3. Elizabeth, b. Jan. 2, 1722-3.
4. Christian, b. April 18, 1726; m. Sarah Freeman of Harwich, Aug. 27, 1752.
5. Daniel, b. July 11, 1729.
6. Isaac, b. Feb. 9, 1732-3.
7. Joseph, b. March 21, 1738-9; d. inft.
8. Sarah, b. April 9, 1742. Died Jan. 20, 1773; m. Nat. Attwood.
9. Joseph, b. June 8, 1744.

#### REFERENCES:

Freeman Genealogy.  
 New England Register for April, 1926.  
 (See Remick Family.)

## SAMUEL FREEMAN FAMILY.

Memorial of Mr. Samuel Freeman of Watertown, and his Descendants.

Whatever impediment may attend the inception of an attempt at a full and reliable memoir of Mr. Samuel Freeman of Watertown, Mass., whether it be difficulties created by the varying accounts of writers or by a paucity of material, we are sure of one fact,—he came over from England in 1630 with that great influx of immigrants that were contemporary with, and many of whom accompanied Gov. Winthrop.

In 'Thompson's Long Island,' it is said that "Gov. Winthrop, father of the Massachusetts Colony, arrived, 1630, with a fleet of 14 vessels and 840 passengers." 'Lewis's History of Lynn' tells that "in 1630 John Winthrop arrived with 11 vessels and 1700 passengers." 'Farmer's Register' says, "Samuel Freeman, born in England, came in 1630 from Devonshire with Gov. Winthrop and is supposed to be brother of Edmund of Sandwich."

Gov. Winthrop arrived in Salem June 12, 1630; and the same year "Mr. Freeman applied for admission as freeman." That he was in Watertown in 1630 is certain; and tradition says "he owned 1/7 part of the township, being a proprietor." 'Winthrop's New England' tells us that "Mr. Freeman's house in Watertown was burned Feb. 11, 1630-1." There has also been a tradition which so intelligent and reliable gentlemen as Rev. James Freeman, D.D. of Boston and William Freeman, Esq. of Cherryfield have repeated, that "Samuel Freeman of Watertown belonged to a family of eight or ten sons." It is further said that "Mr. Freeman died in England whilst on a business visit to his native land, soon after the birth of his son Samuel."

That the wife of Mr. Samuel Freeman was Apphia, is evidenced by 'Watertown Records;' and 'Winthrop's History, vol. i., p. 49, by Savage,' speaks of "Samuel, son of Samuel and Apphia Freeman, born 11th of 3d mo., 1638."

It would be a task to follow and disprove the preposterous statements that have found their way into the press touching the question of Mr. Freeman's conjugal relationship. Most absurd is the report of an alleged union between the widow of Mr. Freeman

and Gov. Prence. Absurd though it be, we cannot proceed with our genealogical narration, and feel that we are faithful to history if we pass without rebuke the manufacture of genealogical crudities that have long tended to perplex and embarrass sincere and legitimate research. Permitted to occupy pages ostensibly devoted to reliable facts, such errors demand at least some notice.

It was with surprise that, long years ago, we read in 'Farmer' that "Samuel, son of Samuel, lived in Watertown, but his son Samuel settled in Eastham." Here was a sufficiency of confusion. Greater was the surprise when, later, we found 'Willis' asserting that "the widow of Samuel married Gov. Prence in 1644, and settled in Eastham with her son." Willis ought to have known better. But, when 'Savage,' as if to make confusion worse confounded, proclaimed "Edmund and John were brothers of Samuel but it is not known whether it was a son or grandson of Edmund, who in 1640 married Rebecca, daughter of Gov. Prence, who had previously married his widowed mother," our already wary distrust of such outside testimony was increasingly intensified. And when, lastly, the 'Historic Genealogical Register' stepped forward on divers occasions, as if not merely to qualify but perpetuate the complexity, saying, with a stolidity that ought not to pertain to a magazine that claims reliance, "Gov. Prence's *third* wife was *Mary, the widow of Samuel Freeman,*" that which had already become sufficiently a vexed question was, to say the least, not thereby settled. Like the cord which annexed the yoke to the draught-tree of the Phrygian's chariot, the knot *seemed* not uneasy to untie, and no sword of Alexander volunteered to cut it; for, in fact, no one much *cared*. Members of the families most interested felt, doubtless, that truth is not to be moved from its foundation by preposterous theories and wild speculations of strangers, nor by unsupported assertions of any or every novice who all infledged may aspire to genealogical distinction.

If we now occupy space more than we at first intended in dispelling mists that have surrounded the subject, the reader will understand it is because the putting forth of this Memorial furnishes a fitting *occasion*. We do not assume that *we* will now *cut* the Gordian knot,—this might seem preposterous; nor do we promise the reader that we will *untie* it; but, if we may be pardoned a few truthful suggestions, whoever will *may* untie it, and be welcome to any honor that shall ensue. We remark, then,—

1. It is certain that *Gov. Prence* died in 1673; and that his *wife* Mary survived him and went to reside with friends in Yarmouth. It is also certain that Yarmouth records say that "*Mrs. Mary Prence*, late wife of Gov. Prence, died Dec. 9, 1695, and was buried Dec. 11." Her grave is still to be seen in "the Howes' burying ground" in that part of the ancient Yarmouth now known as North Dennis. She spent a portion at least of her widowhood in Dennis with her daughter, the widow of Jeremiah Howes; and in possession of descendants of Mr. Howes were, a long time, "Prence-papers." Mrs. Howes was the daughter of Gov. Prence by his wife *Mary Collier*, reported to have married the Governor, April 1, 1635. The *first* wife of Gov. Prence was, as is well known, Patience Brewster, who died 1634. By the two marriages Gov. Prence had nine children; one of them being Rebecca by the 1st marriage, who m. Edmund Freeman the 2d of Sandwich; another was Mercy who m. John Freeman and went to Eastham; another, Sarah, b. 1650, m. Howes.

2. When Gov. Prence "took up his residence in Eastham," he was accompanied by his son-in-law John Freeman of Sandwich. Samuel Freeman, a cousin, from Watertown, came subsequently, and influenced by other considerations than have been conjectured by theorists. Fanciful theories in genealogical matters, although absurd, often cause serious trouble to persons engaged in research. The circulation of the fancies even of a novice, the persistency with which they are repeated, and the ready encouragement received from the managers of certain magazines, is not to be commended.

3. It ought to be sufficient for dispelling the errors that have called for these remarks, that the *specified* near relationship said to exist between Samuel Freeman of Eastham and Gov. Prence was never recognized by early branches of either family. Moreover it seems incredible that Gov. Prence's widow, if she were the own mother of Mr. Samuel Freeman, should have been oblivious to the fact that her claims on *him* and the *blood* were both tender and imperative; and, *if* Mr. Freeman cast off his own mother in her old age to the care of Mrs. Howes, it is not creditable to him. From such reproach, *facts* abundantly shield him. For this reason, varied and conflicting accounts that otherwise were hardly worth notice have justified and demanded this protracted comment. At the same time, let it be understood that our reference to theoretical absurdities is *also* because requisite *ad fidem veræ historiæ*, peradventure our remarks may be of useful suggestion to future investigators.

4. Any relationship or family connection between Mr. Samuel Freeman and Gov. Prence we have always believed to have no other foundation than the marriage of Gov. Prence into the *Collier* family, and Mr. Freeman's connection also with that family by marriage. If we are implicitly to credit authentic records, it is plain that *Mary Collier* being the 2d wife of Gov. Prence has served for the conjecture that Mr. Freeman's mother was meant; and, aided by the fact regarded as confirmatory, that Mr. Freeman came in possession of the *estate* of Gov. Prence in Eastham, theorists have, regardless of the evidence of *purchase* and choosing to put it as Mr. Pratt, in his 'History of Eastham,' ventures to say, *succeeded to Gov. Prence's estate*, found, in their own opinion, satisfactory support!

5. We have now, before we dismiss the subject, to say one word further. Improbable as it may appear to some that Mr. Samuel Freeman was *in any way* the son-in-law of Gov. Prence, it is nevertheless indisputable that Gov. Prence did so call him. Gov. Prence was not the man to claim a relationship that did not exist. Gov. Prence made a deed Jan. 20, 1671, which was acknowledged by himself and wife Mary before Josiah Winslow, assistant; and, in that conveyance says, "In consideration of £30 to me in hand paid by my *beloved sonne in law* Samuel Freeman of Eastham," . . . "my house-lot in Eastham, 18 acres of upland," &c.; which deed is "recorded with the O. C. Records, vol. iii, pp. 201, 202." Now, if it shall, on thorough examination, appear that certain *statistics* are at fault, and that instead of "*Gov. Prence m. Mary, the daughter of William Collier, April 1, 1635,*" it *should* be read WIDOW, it will then be seen that *she* was the mother of Mrs. Freeman who was a Southworth. This new *denouement* will not surprise us.\*

I. SAMUEL FREEMAN returned to England in 1639 on business, where he died in that year. His wife was alive in 1644.

Samuel Freeman, by his wife, Apphia —————? had the following children:

1. Henry, admitted freeman of Watertown, Mass., May, 1645; married 1st Hannah Stearns, Dec. 25, 1650 and 2nd Mary Sherman on Nov. 27, 1656. No issue of either marriage. He died in Boston.

---

\* We have, at this moment of writing, no access to records where may be had a full investigation, and have neither time nor physical ability to resort to them for a full and decisive solution of the question. We therefore rest content with the above suggestions.

2. Apphia (parentage doubtful.) Apphia Freeman we have noted as a daughter of Mr. Samuel Freeman, simply because the occasional mention of her, and other circumstances, impress the idea that there was a daughter Apphia. If Henry was admitted freeman 1645, he must have been born early as 1624, which gives at least fourteen years between his birth and that of his brother Samuel; and these facts and others attendant leave a margin for thought, if not legitimate speculation, and induce increased regret that we know so little of the immediate family of Mr. Samuel Freeman of Watertown; and that in our entrance on this part of the genealogical tour we must be limited to the two sons, Henry and Samuel.
3. Deacon SAMUEL FREEMAN, born in Watertown, Mass., May 11, 1638, went early to Eastham, Mass., but no connection has been made between his family and that of Edmund of Eastham. He married in Eastham, May 26, or 12, 1658, Mercy Southworth,\* born about 1638, died Nov. 25, 1712.

II. MR. SAMUEL FREEMAN became deacon of the church in Eastham, 1676. He was representative to the General Court at Plymouth, 1697. A man of pecuniary resources and of financial ability, he was of service to the town in times of peculiar straits. Of how large a portion of the Prence estate he became purchaser, we are not informed, except the one purchase to which we have already referred in a previous page. Gov. Prence's landed property was valuable, comprising many acres of the best lands in

---

\* 'Judge Davis' has said, "Constant and Thomas Southworth came over with their mother Alice, 1622; and she soon after married Gov. Bradford. There had been an early attachment, and marriage had been prevented by parents of the lady, objecting to the inferior rank and circumstances of Bradford. She now, a widow, came over purposely to marry him." She was a dr. of Alexander Carpenter of Wrentham, England; her first husband, Constant Southworth, died in England. By the 2d marriage, Aug. 14, 1623, she became the wife of Gov. Bradford. Her son Constant Southworth m. a dr. of William Collier of Duxbury; and *their* daughter above, viz., MERCY, married MR. FREEMAN. It may be noted that one of the sisters of Mrs. Freeman, viz., Alice, married Benjamin Church; another, Mary, married John Alden. The father, Constant Southworth, died 1697, in Duxbury. He was a freeman in 1637, and volunteered against the Pequots. He was deputy from Duxbury, 1649; treasurer of the colony many years; assistant 1670 to 1675, also commissary general. Judge Davis has said, "His family connections served to increase his influence,—especially his being step-son to Gov. Bradford, and father-in-law to Church."

Eastham and adjoining towns. Mr. Freeman d. Nov. 25, 1712, æ. 75. Mr. Freeman's wife, MERCY SOUTHWORTH, whom he m. May 12, 1658, was daughter of Constant Southworth, who was some time assistant in the Plymouth Colony.

Children of Deacon Samuel Freeman, and Mercy Southworth were:

1. Apphia, born Dec. 11, 1659; died February 19, 1660 in Eastham.
2. Samuel, born March 26, 1662; married Elizabeth Sparrow February 5, 1654 ? and 2nd Bashua Smith, about 1693.
3. Apphia, born January 1, 1666; married Isaac Pepper of Eastham, October 17, 1685.
4. Constant, born March 31, 1669; married Jane Treat Oct. 11, 1694.
5. ELIZABETH, born June 26, 1671; married Abraham Remick; and 2nd Merrick.
6. Edward, died young.
7. Mary, married John Cole about 1793.
8. Alice, married Nathaniel Merrick.
9. Mercy.

III. ELIZABETH FREEMAN, born June 26, 1671, married Abraham Remick; married second Merrick.

Elizabeth Freeman and Abraham Remick had the following children:

1. CHRISTIAN, born Dec. 16, 1694; married Hannah Freeman Oct. 10, 1717. He died 1783. She died July 7, 1751.
2. Abraham, born May 20, 1696.
3. Mercy, born July 29, 1698.
4. Elizabeth, born Sept. 12, 1700.

(See Remick Family.)

#### REFERENCES:

- History of Cape Cod, Vol. II., page 367.  
 New England Register, Vol. III., page 78; Vol. VI., pages 45, 170; Vol. VII., page 160.  
 Bond's Watertown, Mass., page 226. Savage.  
 Freeman Genealogy, part II., page 351.  
 Treat Genealogy, page 186.

(See Remick Family.)

## GAGNON FAMILY.

MATHURIN GAGNON, bapt. 1606, was the son of Pierre Gagnon and Renee Royer of Tourouvre. He was buried at Chateau-Richer April 22, 1690. He was probably married twice, the name of his first wife being unknown. By her he had at least one child: Marthe, baptized —————; married 1st Jean Doyon November 19, 1650 at Quebec; married 2nd April 21, 1665, Jacques Francois Lesot. She was buried November 21, 1670. (See Doyon Family.) Mathurin Gagnon married second at Quebec in 1647, Sept. 30, Francoise Boudeau (Godeau) baptized 1634, (daughter of Francois and Jeanne Jehanne Boudeau of Guyon, Normandie.) She was buried Sept. 14, 1696. Mathurin Gagnon and his second wife had 14 children.

## REFERENCES:

Dictionnaire Genealogique Des Familles Canadienne, Vol. I., page 246.

Histoire de la Riviere Du Sud, page 203 note.

NOTE: Dictionnaire Genealogique Des Familles Canadienne is obviously in error in making Marthe, who married Jean Doyon in 1650, the daughter of a marriage that took place in 1647. Of course Marthe may have been his sister. This seems doubtful.

(See Doyon Family.)

## GAYLARD FAMILY.

ALICE GAYLARD, wife of Richard Treat, was baptized May 10, 1594, in Pitminster, England. She was the daughter of Hugh Gaylard, who was buried October 21, 1614 at Pitminster. Will is recorded 1614, but is lost. She survived her husband, Richard Treat.

For children of Alice Gaylard and Richard Treat, see Richard Treat.

(See Treat Family.)

## GRAVES FAMILY.

JOHN BOONEN GRAVES was born Dec. 23, 1758, at Ysselsteyn and was probably the son of Ludivucus Marius Graves of Ysselsteyn. He was Dutch Consul to South Carolina in 1788. John Boonen started the firm of J. Boonen Graves & Co., which was still in existence in 1864. He first went to Charleston, S. C., and came from there to New York.

On the 17th of August, 1787, he wrote a letter to Sarah Attwood of Boston, asking her hand in marriage. About a year later they were married on July 20, 1788, by the Rev. Joseph Eckley at the Old South Church.

The marriage notice in the "Massachusetts Centinel" for Wednesday, July 23, 1788, published in Boston, is as follows:

"Married. Last Sunday evening John Bonen Graves, Esq., Consul of South Carolina, from the United States of Holland, to Miss Sally Atwood of this town."

After his marriage to Sarah Attwood he returned to Charleston, S. C., where their first child, Louisa Elizabeth, was born in 1789. On the 12th of April, 1791, their second child, Johanna Barbara Catherine Carolina Graves was born in Amsterdam. The rest of the children were all born in New York.

John Boonen Graves died July 20, 1826.

Sarah Attwood was born April 28, 1768, died Aug. 15, 1824. She was the daughter of Nathaniel Attwood and Sarah Remick, his wife.

John Boonen Graves and Sarah Attwood had the following children:

1. Louisa Elizabeth, born July 12, 1789, died May 28, 1860.
2. Johanna Barbara Catherine Carolina, born April 12, 1791, died Nov. 18, 1813.
3. Matina de Nos, born March 23, 1794; died June 11, 1820.
4. John Boonen, born Sept. 16, 1796; died April 17, 1824.
5. Sarah Ann, born Nov. 16, 1798; died Jan. 7, 1801.
6. William Lodewyk, born Oct. 22, 1800; died Sept. 12, 1837.
7. Edward Attwood, born March 10, 1803; died Oct. 6, 1865.
8. SARAH ANN, born Feb. 14, 1805; died Feb. 11, 1832; married Joseph M. Meert Dec. 20, 1825. He died Feb. 2, 1848.

(See Meert Family.)

9. Nathaniel Marius, born Dec. 10, 1807; died May 28, 1838.
10. Mary, born April 5, 1810; died May 1838.
11. Carolina Adelaide, born Oct. 9, 1813; died July 7, 1814.

## REFERENCES:

Graves Family Bible.

Old Merchants of New York, Vol. II, part I, page 70;  
Vol. III, part I, pages 150, 287-289; Vol. III, part II,  
page 40.

Last Vol. Wills, New York Historical Society.

(See Meert Family.)

## GUYON FAMILY.

JEAN GUYON was a mason in the town of Mortagne in the Province of Perche, France. He was a man of some education, and wrote a fine hand. He sailed from Dieppe in 1634 on a boat commanded by Capt. De Nesle in company with other settlers gotten together by Robert Giffard to go to Canada. There were probably two or more boats to take the party over. Giffard seems to have arrived at Quebec a day before the other settlers. De Nesle's boat on which Jean Guyon and his family were, arrived in Quebec on June 4, 1634, the feast of Pentecost. Jean Guyon's wife was Mathurine Robbin. They were married about 1615. They brought with them seven or eight children, probably having lost one child before they left France.

Jean Guyon was bound to render certain service to Robert Giffard from whom he received large tracts of land.

Jean Guyon died at Quebec May 3, 1663. Mathurine Robbin April 17, 1662. They lived at Beauport, a few miles below Quebec on the St. Lawrence River.

There is a quaint picture of how Jean Guyon rendered homage to Robert Giffard of Beauport for the fief of Du Buisson granted him by Giffard—see pages 42, 43, also frontipiece of "Jean Guyon etude Genealogique by Louis Guyon."

Jean Guyon and his wife, Mathurine Robbin had the following children:

1. Barbe, bapt. April 9, 1617; died \_\_\_\_\_; married 1641 Pierre Paradis.
2. JEAN, bapt. Aug. 1, 1619; died Jan. 14, 1694; married Elizabeth Couillard Nov. 21, 1645; died April 5, 1704.
3. Simon, bapt. Sept. 2, 1621; died, 1682; married Louisa Racine Nov. 10, 1653; she died 1675.
4. \*Marie, bapt. Jan. 29, 1627; died Sept. 1, 1696; married Francois Belanger 1637.
5. Claude, bapt. April 22, 1629; died 1694; married Catherine Collin? 2nd Catherine Blouin 1688.
6. Dennis, bapt. June 30, 1631; died \_\_\_\_\_; married Elizabeth Boucher 1659.

---

\* Date of birth doubtful. See "Jean Guyon," page 62.

7. Michael, bapt. March 3, 1634; married Genevieve Marsolet 1662.
8. Francois, born at Beaufort in Canada; bapt. 1635; died —; married Madeleine Marsolet.

JEAN GUYON, oldest son of Jean Guyon and Mathurine Robbin, was born in Mortagne, Province of Perche, France; baptized August 1, 1619. Nothing is known of his youth. Probably he helped his father in his profession of mason and farmer. On the 21st of November, —, Jean Guyon, the younger, married Elizabeth Couillard, baptized Feb. 9, 1631. They were probably married by an English minister during the occupation of Quebec by the Kirks. Louis Kirk is said to have been her godfather, and Adrien Duchesne, the wife of the English surgeon, her godmother.

Jean Guyon seems to have been a surveyor. Upon the death of his father, Jean Guyon, the younger took the surname of Du Buisson. He belonged to a family that was noted for its love of learning and that gave its best energies to the promotion of education in the New World. A Guyon who was a third cousin of Genevieve (Jadot) Anthon, was the wife of Antoine de La Mothe Cadillac, founder of Detroit.

Jean Guyon Du Buisson and his wife, Elizabeth Couillard, had the following children:

1. Marie Madeleine, bapt. 1647; married 1661, Adrien Hayot. The name of their descendants later was changed to Ayot. She died about 1681. He married 2nd Marie Pechina, widow of Guillaume Gourot at Quebec, 1686.
2. Joseph, bapt. Sept. 11, 1649; married January 29, 1674, Genevieve Cloutier.
3. Traveois Xavier, married Marie Celestus in 1683.
4. Guillaume, bapt. 1652; married in 1688, Jeanne Toupin; both of them died at Chateau Richer in 1716.
5. Nicolas, bapt. Feb. 13, 1655; died Feb. 6, 1685.
6. Catherine Gertrude, bapt. Aug. 11, 1660; married 1682, Dennis Belleperche. One of his children, Pierre, moved to Detroit.
7. Marie, bapt. 1662; died 1688.

8. GENEVIEVE, born 1665; married 1690, Nicolas Doyon. Nicolas was the son of Jean Doyon, the emigrant from Aunis and Marthe Gagnon, his wife. Genevieve and her husband lived at Chateau Richer. He died 1715; she died 1734. (See Doyon Family.)
9. Charles, bapt. Sept. 29, 1667; died 1676.
10. Elizabeth, born 1667; died young.
11. Pierre, born 1670; married Oct. 11, 1694, Angelique Testu at l'Ange-gardien. He died in 1697 and his widow married 2nd Aug. 29, 1699, Francois Aubert.
12. Anne, born 1674; died young.

## REFERENCE:

Jean Guyon; etude Genealogique, by Louis Guyon.

(See Doyon Family.)

## HÉBERT FAMILY.

LOUIS HÉBERT was probably the first white settler on this continent who left descendants who today survive.

Hébert was apothecary to the King, the family having long held this office with the royal family. On the 7th of March, 1604, he left Havre de Grace in the company of Samuel de Champlain and M. de Monts, who was in charge of the expedition, and M. de Poutrincourt. The party landed at Passamaquoddy Bay on a small Island called Sainte Croix after a trip of two months; here thirty-six of the party died during the winter. In the Spring the colonists moved to Port Royal on the main land. De Monts who was a protestant, gave over the management of the colony to Jean de Brancourt, baron of Poutrincourt, who came to this country from La Rochelle on May 11, 1606. Poutrincourt took charge of the colony and started to cultivate the soil. He found many Indians in the country and suggested to his followers to sleep on the boats rather than on shore. His instructions were not carried out by all of the party, and the Indians attacked one night those who were on shore and killed four. When the alarm was sounded on the boats, of which I believe there were two, Louis Hébert was one of those who went to the rescue. The home government did not back the colonists so they returned to France.

In 1610 Louis Hébert again came to this country, this time with the son of M. de Poutrincourt. They left Dieppe on Feb. 25, 1610, and arrived at Port Royal in June. On this trip both M. de Poutrincourt and Louis Hébert brought their wives. They were the first two French women on this continent.

The winter of 1611 was a hard one. There was much sickness both among the settlers and Indians. Louis Hébert had much to do to furnish medicine both to his people and the Indians, who strange to say seemed to have liked his medicine. Nevertheless 12 of the colonists died this year.

In 1613 Louis Hébert was in command of the Fort at Port Royal. While he was in charge of the fort Samuel Argall, deputy governor of Virginia, attacked and burnt Port Royal. The attack was made when the men of the colony were at work in the fields five miles away. The burning of the fort forced the colonists to return to France. They probably thought that they would return

shortly, but Hébert never did return to that part of Canada (Arcadia).

In the spring of 1608 Champlain got a boat and set sail for Quebec and the St. Lawrence. He arrived on July 3, and founded a colony there. Louis Hébert followed him in 1617. In the spring of that year he left Honfleur with his wife, Marie Rollet, and his three children, Guillaume, Anne and Guillemette, on a boat commanded by Capt. Morin, together with Champlain. The trip over was rough and the boat was in danger of floating ice; the passengers gave themselves up for lost, but the priest prayed and by a miracle they arrived in Quebec 14 June, 1617, after 13 weeks and one day at sea, always in fear of death, and at the mercy of the sea, storm and ice.

There is a legend that the first few weeks on shore were spent in tents pitched under the branches of a great elm tree. This tree was finally cut down in 1846. While camping under this tree Hébert was busy building his house. The first house was a small one built of logs, which later was replaced by one of stone. It stood in the upper town between the streets of Ste. Famille and Couillard. The stone house that was later built on this site measured thirty eight feet by fourteen, and in 1668 was the cradle of the little Seminary of Quebec.

As soon as Hébert had a roof to cover his family he began actively to cultivate the soil. He has been rightly called the first farmer of Canada. If others had shown the same energy the famine that followed the arrival of the first colony would not have taken place. As it was, Hébert's grain was taken from him to supply the wants of the less energetic colonists so that he did not profit by his labors.

In 1620 Louis Hébert was Agent of the King (Procureur du Roi.) He got certain grants of land from M. de Montmorency in 1623. He had these lands confirmed by Henry de L'evy duc de Ventadour etc.—on the 26 of January 1626. During this time Louis Hébert brought over apple trees, cattle and grape vines from France.

The part of Hébert's property in the upper town became the property of Laval University. The property of Lespiney in 1725 called the fief of St. Charles, passed into the hands of the Intendent Talon, who gave the property to the General Hospital in Quebec. Victoria Park was part of this property.

On January 25, 1627 Louis Hébert died. He was buried at his request at the foot of the large cross in the cemetery of the Recollets. Later his remains were removed in 1670 to the crypt of the chapel. His death is said to have been caused by a fall. The Abbe Tanguay says: "The Colony experienced a real loss in the death of Hébert who, next to Champlain had taken the most active part in establishing Quebec, and in the progress of New France."

His widow married 2nd Guillaume Hubon May 16, 1629. She was buried May 27, 1649 at Quebec.

Children of Louis Hébert and Marie Rollet, his wife, were:

1. Guillaume, bapt. ———; married 1st October 1634 Hellene Desportes. He was buried in 1639.
2. GUILLEMETTE, born 1606, married August 26, 1621 Guillaume Couillard, buried Oct. 20, 1684 in the Church of l'Hotel-Dieu. (See Couillard Family.)
3. Anne, married early in 1618 Etienne Jonquest. This was the first marriage in Canada.

#### REFERENCES:

Sayard, Histoire du Canada, page 41.

Ferland I, pages 182, 190, 220.

Leclercq II, page 128.

La Premier Famille Françoise Au Canada.

(See Couillard Family.)

## HONE FAMILY.

I. JOHANNES HAHN (later called Hone), born in 1721 —, the first ancestor of the Hone family in New York, was a "Palatine," who at the age of 18 years arrived in Philadelphia on August 27, 1739, on the ship *Samuel* from Rotterdam, Hugh Pierce, master. The date of his death is unknown, and the last mention of him that has been found is in 1749. New York Lutheran Church records tell us that "Johann Hahn Y. M. (young man), from Philadelphia" was married on October 25, 1740 to Magdalena Klotzen or Klotz, a widow.

Children of Johannes Hahn (Hone) and Magaddalena Klotzen (or Klotz) were:

1. JOHANN PHILIP, born April 15, 1743, bapt. May 1st, 1743, died Sept. 13, 1798 of Yellow Fever in New York. Married Dec. 12, 1763 Hester Bourdet, born Jan. 3, 1742, died Sept. 18, 1798 of Yellow Fever.
2. Magdalena, born —————; died —————; married Hendrick Will Nov. 25, 1761.
3. Catherine, born 1748, died 1822, married Philip Jacob Oswald on Dec. 2, 1767. He was born 1739, died 1805.

## REFERENCES:

St. Nicholas Society Collections, Vol. I, page 226.  
 Vol. II, pages 98-9.  
 Genealogy of Southern New York, page 1226.

Note: It is interesting to observe that the Hone's family crest is the same as that of an Irish family of Hone. Perhaps in earlier days an Irish Hone had migrated to Holland, as the Livingstons did from Scotland.

II. PHILIP HONE, bapt. May 1, 1743, died of Yellow Fever Sept. 13, 1798. He married Hester Bourdet (Bourdette) December 12, 1763. She was born January 3, 1742 and died of Yellow Fever September 18, 1798. In 1759, in his 17th year, he enlisted in the Provincial Troops. At that time he had already adopted the name of Philip Hone instead of Johan Philip Hahn. He lived in a house in Dutch Street in 1780. Four years later he

bought a wooden house on the corner of Dutch and John Streets, where he transacted his business. Philip Hone was made a Freeman of the City of New York in 1765 by Mayor John Cruger.

Children of Philip Hone and Hester Bourdet were:

1. Judith, married Jacob Hochstraper of Rensselaerburgh.
2. JOHN, born September 16, 1764; died April 12, 1832; married November 29, 1786, Joanna Stoutenburgh, born June 26, 1765, died April 2nd, 1838.
3. Samuel, born September 22, 1767; died February 5, 1816; married Hannah Querean. She died March 23, 1812.
4. Philip, born December 20, 1769; died August 1, 1770.
5. Julia, born May 1st, 1771; died April 1779.
6. Philip, born October 22, 1773; died March 15, 1774.
7. Benjamin, born December 17, 1774; died July, 1783.
8. Henry Will, born July 3, 1777; died Oct. 3, 1777.
9. Magdalena, born October 18, 1778; died December 11, 1779.
10. Philip, born October 25, 1780; died May 5, 1851; married Catherine Dunscombe who was born Oct. 1778, died May 24, 1850.
11. Esther, born December 4, 1782; died July, 1783.
12. Esther, born December 17, 1786; died October 1787.

JOHN HONE, son of Philip Hone and Hester Bourdet, his wife, born September 16, 1764, died April 12, 1832; married November 29, 1786 Joanna Stoutenburgh. John Hone and his more famous brother, Philip Hone, entered the auction and commission business. The name of their firm was "Philip & John Hone." The business was that of auctioneering, which at that time consisted chiefly in selling the cargoes brought to the port of New York. The firm was very prosperous and bore an honored name throughout the United States.

Walter Barrett in his *Old Merchants of New York City*, says: "Few of this generation will remember the name of Hone. Yet there are readers of this book who will recollect a day when that name was as highly honored and as extensively known in this city as it possibly could be. As far back as I can recollect, there were two brothers in the auction business of the name of Hone. The firm was 'Philip & John Hone.' Their auction store was up in Fulton Street around the corner from Pearl. John Hone lived

in one of the seven houses fronting the Bowling Green. Stephen Whitney lived and died on one end of Bowling Green Row, and John Hone on the other. Both brothers were magnificent specimens of American men. Philip Hone lived up Broadway, one door this side of the South corner of Park place. The corner at that time was covered by a small wooden tenement, and on the first floor thread and needles were sold. The Hones were the *crème de da crème* of society in those days. Philip and John Hone had made large fortunes. In 1826 they dissolved, and Philip was elected Mayor of the City of New York. John Hone for the sake of his sons determined to continue the auction business under the name of 'John Hone & Sons.' They built a store on the northeast corner of Wall and Pearl, where the Seamen's Savings Bank now stands. Never had New York merchants so fine a collection of sons. They were noble looking fellows. Henry was the handsomest man, in 1830, in the United States. John, Jr., was a noble fellow. He died in Rome, and his widow afterward married lawyer Frederick DePeyster. Isaac Hone, another son, was of this firm, and after a variety of mercantile ups and downs, disasters and successes, became a deputy collector under Collector Hugh Maxwell. At one time Isaac was of the firm of Hone and Fleming. His partner, John B. Fleming, drew a prize in the lottery, of thirty thousand dollars. Two other sons were members of the rich firm of John Hone & Sons. Henry was one. He lived up opposite St. John's Park in Varick Street, a few doors from the church. What dinner parties that man gave! What choice 'Chateaux Margeaux,' and Lynch's 'Sauterne.' Poor Dominick Lynch! Henry was elected a member of the Legislature at one time. He married as his second wife Miss Haywood. Although opposed by her father, Henry Haywood of Charleston, S. C., (who owned 2,500 negroes and who resided in the old mansion with pillars, seen by the Democratic delegates as they came out of Charleston last April, on the line of the North Eastern Railroad,) and who did not like Hone at all. It was of no use, this opposition. Harry Hone was a dashing fellow and he carried the day. Miss Haywood ran away from her father and married handsome Harry. She was rich, and loved her husband; but he, alas, poor Harry—down, down, down he went, and finally died in a low rum shop in Chatham street. All gone—used up—his death a mercy, for his wife allowed him so much a

year to keep clear of her. Another of the firm of John Hone & Sons, was the now well-known Myndert Van Schaick; he married a daughter of John Hone. John Anthon, the lawyer, married another daughter. Van Schaick was the indoor man, and used to hand down the pieces of dry goods from the shelves during a sale at auction. Of all that crowd, Van Schaick is the only one left."

"When his son Isaac and his firm 'Tredwell & Hone' failed, old John Hone, his father, had to pay \$130,000 for them. He was obliged to sell his United States stock to save the name of Hone from dishonor. He felt so deeply, and had so much pride in keeping the commercial name of his sons untainted, that he cheerfully made any sacrifice. Old John Hone was a trump in his day."

"The two brothers, John and Philip Hone, afterwards so prominent in the city were trained from boyhood in John McVickar's counting-house, and then established in business. John Hone in after life often acknowledging that he owed all his success to the unlimited credit opened for him in London by John McVickar, with his correspondents, more especially with the great house of Phyn, Ellice & English.

Their store was a very large brick one at No. 61 Wall Street. The business began to fall off in about 1830 when the field in which they had had almost a monopoly became crowded with competitors.

Children of John Hone and Joanna Stoutenburgh were:

1. Elizabeth, born Sept. 8, 1787; died ———; married Myndert Van Schaick.
2. Philip, born January 8, 1789; died ———; married Anne Hazard.
3. Isaac, born April 19, 1790; died Dec. 4, 1790.
4. John, born April 18, 1791; died August 1792.
5. JUDITH, born Nov. 20, 1792; died 1876; married John Anthon. (See Anthon Family.)
6. Isaac, born February 14, 1794; died June 1856; married Eliza Kent.
7. Joanna, born April 24, 1795; died Sept. 24, 1796.
8. John, born Aug. 30, 1796; died April 9, 1829; married Nov. 12, 1817 Marie Antoinette Kane, b. May 22, 1798. She died Oct. 30, 1869.

9. Samuel, born January 3, 1798; died April 5, 1798.
10. Joanna Esther, born Jan. 31, 1799; died Sept. 29, 1842; married Samuel Shaw Howland.
11. Henry, born January 7, 1800; died Sept. 29, 1856; married 1st Caroline Burrill; 2nd Hannah Haywood.
12. Edward, born August 16, 1801; died April 1st, 1802.
13. George Washington, born Nov. 1st, 1802; died June 30, 1803.
14. William, born May 29, 1804; died June 1, 1804.
15. Ann, born June 6, 1805; died January 26, 1887; married Rev. James M. Mathews.
16. Catherine, born February 5, 1807; died ———; married Charles Clinton.

## REFERENCES:

Manuscript, Genealogy of Hone Family in the handwriting of Mrs. W. H. Anthon.

The Old Merchants of New York, by Walter Barrett.

(See Anthon Family.)

## JADOT FAMILY.

LOUIS JADOT was a private soldier in the Company De Muy (or May) in 1758, June 26th; on that day he was married. The record of his rank and parentage reads as follows: "Louis Jadot, soldier of the Company of De Muy, major son of Jacques Jadot," etc. George Christian Anthon was doubtless lead into the error of supposing that Jadot was a Major from the above. As a matter of fact all that the above states is that he was the oldest son.

From marriage certificate we learn that he was a French private soldier. That he was a trader is proved by a letter of Sir William Johnson dated June 12, 1767, to Gen. Gage, part of which reads as follows:

"In fact the Traders, both English and French, but particularly the latter generally do as they please and it is not in the power of the Comiss'ys. to prevent them. One of the consequences of their Liberty is the murder of Jadot, & the Indian. We must Expect many such accidents if they Trade where they please with people who have it not in their power to obtain justice from us be their Conduct what it will, and who are so sensible thereof & so revengefull that they will not hesittate to do mischief, when they think themselves aggrieved,—I have had the particulars of Jadot's Affair and wish it may go no farther; the Ind'n. murdered is Son to the Chief of Cheneessio, a Troublesome people who have much influence. Two or Three such incidents may bring about such consequences as will open the Eyes of the public, and convince the Government of the necessity there is for having the Trade with the Ind's. under some Limitation & Inspection or otherwise Leave the whole to chance."

The above also accounts for his death and fixes the approximate date thereof as some time in the Spring of 1767. The only other mention of his name that I have found is in the following note from the "History of the Conspiracy of Pontiac," by Parkman, page 526:

"By the following extract from an official paper, signed by Captain Grant, and forwarded from Detroit, it appears that Pontiac still retained, or professed to retain, his original designs against the Garrison of Detroit. The paper has no date, but was

apparently written in the autumn of 1764. By a note appended to it we are told that the Baptiste Campau referred to was one of those who had acted as Pontiac's secretary during the Summer of 1763.

'On Tuesday last Mr. Jadeau told me, in the presence of Col. Gladwin & Lieut. Hay of the 6th Regiment, that one Lesperance, a Frenchman, on his way to the Illinois, he saw a letter with the Ottawas, at the Miamee River, he is sure wrote by one Baptist Campau, (a deserter from the settlement of Detroit) & signed by Pontiac, from the Illinois, setting forth that there were five hundred English coming to the Illinois, & that they, the Ottawas, must have patience; that he, Pontiac, was not to return until he had defeated the English, and then he would come with an army from the Illinois to take Detroit which he desired they might publish to all the nations about. That powder and ball was in as great plenty as water. That the French Commissary La Cleff had sold above forty thousand weight of powder to the inhabitants, that the English if they came there might not have it.

'There was another letter on the subject sent to an inhabitant of Detroit, but he can't tell in whose hands it is.'"

LOUIS JADOT, (Jadeau) was the son of Jacques Jadot, Master Brewer of Rocrois, Mayor and Alderman of the town. His mother was Anne Roland. His mother and father were married in the parish of St. Nicholas, Rocrois, diocese of Reims in Champagne. He married Marie Marguerite Des Buttes St. Martin, daughter of Jean Baptiste Des Buttes St. Martin and Marie Louise Doyon, on the 26th of June 1758. At the time of his marriage he was a soldier in the company of Demuy, and stated that he could not write or sign his name. I think he was married at Detroit in the Parish of St. Anne.

After the French lost Canada he acted as interpreter for the English, and traded with the Indians. His wife died on Sept. 26, 1764, he being killed by Indians at Fort Wayne (?) some time in 1764 or 5. They had only one child, Genevieve Jadot, who was left an orphan at the age of about two years; born May 20, 1763, married Geo. Christian Anthon, as his second wife, July 18, 1778, died April 16, 1821. She was taken care of by her aunt, Mariana De Navarre, who had married Jacques Des Buttes St. Martin, Interpreter of the Huron language. Mariana De Navarre married second, Dr. Geo. Christian Anthon, as his first wife.

## REFERENCES :

The Narrative of the Settlement of Geo. C. Anthon.  
 Translation of Marriage Certificate of Louis Jadot and  
 Marie Marguerite Des Buttes St. Martin.

(See Anthon Family.)

## TRANSLATION OF MARRIAGE CERTIFICATE :

The twenty-sixth day of June in the year one thousand and seven hundred and fifty eight after the publication of one announcement on the twenty-fifth Sunday of current year at the Parish Mass.

Louis Jadot—soldier of the Company of Demuy. Major son of Jacques Jadot, master brewer and citizen of Rocrois, old Mayor and Alderman of the town, and Marie Anne Roland, his father and mother were honorably married in the parish of St. Nicholas of Rocrois, Diocese of Reims in Champagne, & Marie Marguerite Des Buttes St. Martin, major daughter of Jean Baptiste Des Buttes St. Martin and Marie Louise Doyon, her father and mother were legitimately married, having granted them a dispense of Two announcements for reason known to us & conforming with the power invested to us by his Illustrious and Reverend Father in Christ, Bishop of Quebec, where copy will be found first pages of Register. And having found no Canonical opposition or reasons (no priest) ord of the Franciscan friar Chaplain of the Troops of His Majesty in this Town also the Curé of St. Anne's Parish, having received publicly their mutual consent and so gave them the Nuptial Benediction in presence of Hon. Belange Officer Lieutenant of Troops of His Majesty also Commandent for the King in the Town, Mr. DeKay, officer of the troops, Sirs Portier, Vincenore Guard of Magazine, Sirs DesButtes, Jacques & Joseph, Brothers of the Bride also Gude & Beaupre signed with us.

*Undersigned.* Jadot, Berranger, DeKay, Portier, Jacques St. Martin, Joseph DuBuk.

The husband has declared before witnesses that he could not write or sign his name.

Undersigned. Brother Temple Bocquet (Mre.) Friar  
 Recollet.

Extrait du registre des baptêmes, mariages et sépultures de la parville de Sandwich, pour l'année mil sept cent soixante trois :

Le 20 Mai 1763 a été baptisée Geneviève, du légitime mariage de Louis Jadot et de Marguerite Desbats.

Le parrain a été Pierre Chène, la marraine Marie Louise Doyon.

(Signé) P. Potier, Mg.

Je certifie le présent certificat est extrait textuellement du registre original.

Sandwich, le 9 Sept. 1881.

(Signé) Ch. Fain.

Marguerite Desbuttes died Sept. 25th and was buried at St. Ann's Sept. 26th, 1764. She was the mother of Genevieve Jadot. Jadot himself was alive at this time.

## KLOTZ FAMILY.

MADELENA KLOTZ, a widow, married John Hahn (Hone)  
October 25, 1740.

(See Hone Family.)

## LE MERE FAMILY.

NICOLE LE MÈRE (or La Maire) came over with her husband, Gaspard Boucher, and five children, on a boat commanded by Captain de Ville, which left Dieppe in 1634 and arrived in Quebec June 4 or 5, 1634. They came from Mortagne in the Province of Perche in the company of other settlers brought over by Robert Giffard.

## REFERENCE :

Etude genealogique sur Jean Guyon par Louis Guyon,  
page 33.

(See Boucher Family.)

## LUMPKIN FAMILY.

WILLIAM LUMPKIN was at Yarmouth, 1643. His wife was Thomasine by whom he had the following children:

1. THOMASINE, born 1626, married to Samuel Mayo. Married 2nd John Sunderland. (See Mayo Family.)
2. Hannah, who probably married John Gray.
3. Another daughter, married to Eldridge.

William Lumpkin died in 1671. His will is dated July 23, 1668.

## REFERENCE:

Genealogical Dictionary of New England, Vol. III, page 131.

(See Mayo Family.)

MADOCK FAMILY.

JOHANNA MADOCK, wife of David Vickers.

REFERENCE :

New York Historical Society 1892, page 53.

(See Vickers Family.)

## MAYO FAMILY.

REV. JOHN MAYO. Although this is an Irish name, the subject of the following sketch was born in England and graduated from an English university. He came over probably about 1638, and in 1639 was in Barnstable, where he was ordained a teaching elder in connection with Rev. John Lothrop. He was a freeman in 1640. In 1646 he removed to Eastham and subsequently took charge of the church in that town, where he continued until 1655, when he was settled over the second, or North, church in Boston. In 1673, in consequence of advanced age and infirmities, he went again to Barnstable, and there and at Eastham and Yarmouth passed the remainder of his life with his children, dying at the latter place in May, 1676. He was a man of prominence as a minister, and in 1658 preached the annual election sermon. His wife was named Tamosin, or Tamsin; she died in Yarmouth in 1682, February 22nd. He died May, 1676.

Rev. John Mayo and his wife Tamosin ——— had the following children, all born in England:

1. Hannah, born ———; married 1642 Nathaniel Bacon.
2. SAMUEL, born about 1625; died 1663/4; estate administered by his father April 26, 1664.
3. John, born ———; married Hannah Reycroft January 1, 1651; he died 1706.
4. Nathaniel, born ———; married Hannah Prence Feb. 13, 1650. He died 1662 and his widow married 2nd Jonathan Sparrow.
5. Elizabeth, born ———; married Joseph Howes.

II. SAMUEL, son of Rev. John Mayo was in Barnstable in 1639. He adopted the profession of mariner, running a packet for some time between the Cape and Boston. He afterwards became connected with some members of the Sandwich church in the purchase of Oyster Bay, Long Island. There was a wide difference among the Sandwich settlers on theological points, but in this instance the minister, Rev. William Leverich, and his sympathizers, were the liberal and tolerant wing, and were in the minority. Mr. Leverich and his associates resolved upon removal, and Mr. Mayo conveyed their goods to the new settlement in 1653 or 4.

It is stated by Hazard and other authorities, that the vessel called the "Desire of Barnstable," which brought the goods of Mr. Leverich to Oyster Bay, belonged to the said Samuel Mayo, and was commanded by John Dickerson, probably a brother of Philemon, of Southold. She was seized in Hempstead Harbor, by one Thomas Baxter, under pretence of authority from Rhode Island, while cruising against the Dutch, that province having taken part with England in the war against Holland, and the vessel being, as was alleged, within the Dutch territory.

The commissioners of the United Colonies interfered, to procure a restoration, and sent a deputation to Governor Eaton of Rhode Island for that purpose. He denied the right of Baxter to make the capture, but the owner engaging to prosecute the offender in the courts of law, the matter was dropped.

This Baxter was, beyond all question, a turbulent and unprincipled fellow, and the general court at Hartford, in April, 1645, were compelled to notice his vile conduct, and to censure him for his reproachful speeches against that jurisdiction. They likewise imposed a fine upon him of £50, requiring him to execute a bond in £200 for his good behavior for one year, and to be further responsible "to New Haven and Rhode Island for his bad actions within their limits." Upon the complaint of Mayo, for seizing his vessel under false pretences, the court adjudged him to pay the owner £150, but that the sails, ropes, two guns, etc. if returned with the vessel, should be accounted as £18 toward that amount.

Capt. Samuel Mayo had vessels employed in coasting and the fisheries. In 1647 the town granted him liberty to erect a fish house on the point of land below his house now called Crowell's Point.

Mr. Mayo afterwards removed to Boston, where he died in 1663. He married Thomasine, daughter of William Lumpkin of Yarmouth.

Samuel Mayo and his wife, Thomasine Lumpkin Mayo, had the following children:

1. \*Mary, born 1645.
2. \*Samuel, born 1647.

---

\* Note: The first two children were baptized February 3, 1650. The long lapse of time between the births and baptisms and the fact that the mother joined the church of Mr. Lothrop January 20th of that year indicates that she was in sympathy with the disaffection towards the majority of the Yarmouth Church and the minister, which was known to exist at that time.

3. Hannah, born Oct. 20, 1650.
4. Elizabeth, born May 22, 1653; married Samuel Treat 1674.
5. Nathaniel, born April 1, 1658.
6. Sarah, born ————— 1660.

## REFERENCES :

Genealogical Dictionary of New England, Vol. II, pages  
187-188.

Genealogical Notes of Barnstable Families, Part I, page  
481. Part II, pages 220-221.

## MEERT FAMILY.

“The Meerts are descendants from one of the seven patricians *Ser-Huyghs, Steenweg, Coudenberg, Ser-Roelofs, Bodenbeck, Sleends & Sweertz*. ‘S’huyhe-Kuits geslachte’ were the linial sons of Huyghs also called ‘Cluting’ and their origin runs back to 950. Their letters patent were given by the Duke of Brabant, Jean II, who in 1306 returned the administration of the City of Brussels to the seven patrician families. Their castles were called ‘S’Hugenay-Steen’ or Serhuygskin-Steen (which means the castle of Sir Huygh). In 1330 a document was made ceding the fourth part of the twelfth part of Stridcastel, located between the King’s house and the Church of St. Nicholas to a Chanoine called Mathias de Meerte and we are the descendants of that family of de Meerte which has been so prominent in the City of Brussels. The father of Uncle Godefroid (whose sister was my mother) was the last owner of above piece of property. The de Meertes were descendants of the Clutings who were the Huyghs and also belong to a branch of the Bodenbecks. In 1375 they were added to the list of the Patricians by an ordinance of the Duc of Brabant, 19 Juin 1375. All this is found in the history of the City of Brussels.”

(The foregoing is taken from a memorandum in the handwriting of Joseph Michael Meert, of whom below.

From the above I should judge that Michael Meert’s father and his uncle Godefroid both were suitors for the hand of Michael Meert’s mother. However, the younger brother, Michael’s father, was the favored suitor. S. F.)

JOSEPH MICHAEL MEERT was born about 1782 probably at Bruges, Belgium, at which place he was a member of a lodge of masons in 1812. Family tradition says that he was forced to serve in Napoleon’s Army as a member of the guard. Also, that many of the family paintings were more or less hurt during the wars by being stored in a barn. I think he came to this country shortly after 1812. Who his father and mother were I do not know. He had a sister who died at Louvain before the 21st of March, 1859, who left all her property to her brother, Joseph Michael Meert, or his heirs, he being then dead.

He was of an old family and had the title of Count de Domberg. There is also a tradition in the family that on coming to this country he was shipwrecked on some of the southern islands near Cuba and floated around for a number of days on a hen coop, perhaps eating the more or less damp and dead hens. At all events, when he got to New York, he probably had letters of introduction to John Boonen Graves, the Dutch Consul. Being a young man of social position and some property, the Consul who had a prosperous business in New York introduced him to the members of his family. A few years later it is quite natural that Joseph Michael Meert married in 1825 Sarah Ann Graves, the daughter of the Consul, who was about 23 years younger than her husband. She was not strong and died of consumption in 1832, Feb. 11.

In 1833 Joseph Michael Meert took a trip to Europe and bought many paintings. He was quite an artist but from the paintings of his collection that I have seen, I think that he must have been a poor judge of other people's work or often swindled. During this trip or earlier, his claims to the nobility were confirmed by Wm. I of Holland, perhaps in 1812.

He died in 1848. His death notice is in the New York Evening Post February 3rd or 5th, the date of his death being February 2nd.

Joseph Michael Meert and Sarah Ann Graves had the following children who grew up:

1. Maria Theresa born Dec. 17, 1826, died April 21, 1903, unmarried.
2. Sally Attwood born Sept. 2nd, 1828, died April 13, 1911, married Wm. Henry Anthon January 23, 1850. He was born Aug. 2, 1827, died Nov. 7, 1875.

(See Anthon Family.)

## MILLER FAMILY.

JOHN MILLER was minister at Yarmouth in 1652 where a sermon of his was regarded as offering sufficient occasion to instruct a jury to make due inquiry to vindicate the government. He lived in Boston, Roxbury, Rowley, Yarmouth and Groton. Born at Gonville; went to College at Cambridge about 1627. Freeman, May 22, 1639.

His children were:

1. John, March 1632.
2. MEHITABLE, born in Roxbury, July 13, or 12, 1638, who married John Crowe of Yarmouth. (See Crowe Family.)
3. Lydia, born 1640, Feb. 2, or April 12, married Nathaniel Fish of Sandwich.
4. Susanna, born May 2, 1647, died at Charleston, Oct. 14, 1669.
5. Elizabeth, born Oct. 13, 1649, married Samuel Frost of Billerica.
6. Faith, who married Nathaniel Winslow of Marshfield Aug. 31, 1664.
7. Hannah, who married Joseph Frost of Charleston, Nov. 6, 1677. His wife Lydia, maiden name not known, died in Boston, August 7, 1656. He died at Groton, June 12, 1663.

## REFERENCES:

Genealogical Dictionary of New England, Vol. III, page 209.

Freeman's Cape Cod, Vol. II, page 186; Vol. I, pages 249-50.

(See Crowe Family.)

## MONTENACK FAMILY.

TANNEKEN MONTENACK, married about 1663, wife of Jan Van Gelder. She probably had a brother, Frans, who was witness at the baptism of her daughter, Elizabeth Van Gelder on Jan. 11, 1669, and a sister, Maryntia, who was a witness at the baptism of her son, Hermanus Van Gelder on Sept. 5, 1666.

For more information and list of children, see Van Gelder Family.

## PIAUD FAMILY.

JUDITH PIAUD fled with her widowed mother Judith Piaud, two sisters and a cousin from Rochelle, parish of St. Sauveur, France about 1681. After a short stay in England, they moved to New York. She married Samuel Burdet, a fellow countryman from La Rochelle in or about 1687.

## REFERENCES:

Huguenot Emigration to America, Vol. I, page 288-91  
Note.

Collections Huguenot Society of America, Vol. I.

(See Burdet Family.)

## OBBE FAMILY

Hendrick Hendrickszen Obee (Obbe or Obe) was a drummer; on lists of catechumens of a Brooklyn church in 1662. He married first Aeltje or Keltie Claes, probably in Holland; married second January 13, 1692, in N. Y., Marretje Jans, widow of William Janszen. In 1664 he took the oath of allegiance in N. Y. to the English.

He may have been a Dane from Oby in Denmark. He was City constable in 1665 and juryman in 1667. He was collector of excise in same year. His name is given as Hendrick Herszen.

His children, baptized in New York, were:

1. Lydia, bapt. June 5, 1658; married Jan Dally 1668. (See Dally Family.)
2. Grietie, (Margaret) bapt. August 17, 1659; married Nathaniel Deely or Dally of New Castle, Aug. 1, 1677.

## REFERENCES:

Early Settlers of Kings County, page 217.

Scandinavian Immigrants in N. Y., page 292.

Stokes' Iconography, Vol. II, pages 273, 364; Vol. VI, page 512.

(See Dally Family.)

## PRENCE FAMILY.

I. THOMAS PRENCE was born 1599/1600 in Lechdale, England; son of Thomas of Lechdale in County of Gloucester, near Cricklade in Wilts. He died in Plymouth, Mass., March 29, 1672/3. He came to New England on the ship *Fortune* in Nov. 1621, and lived in the Plymouth Colony, but in 1635 was of Duxbury and in 1644 of Eastham, but returned to Plymouth, where he spent the remainder of his life. He was Governor of Plymouth Colony, 1634, 1638, 1657–1672; Governor's Assistant, 1632, 1635, 1636, 1637, 1639–1556; Treasurer of the colony, 1636–1640; Commissioner of the United Colonies, 1645, 1650, 1653–1658, 1661, 1663, 1670–1672; Member of the Councils of War, 1642, 1643, 1646, 1653, 1657, 1658, 1667; President of the Councils of War in 1657, 1658, 1667.

He married in Plymouth, Aug. 5, 1624, Patience, died 1634, daughter of Elder William Brewster; second, in 1635, Mary, daughter of William Collier, and third, Mary, widow of Samuel Freeman.

He had the following children by Patience Brewster:

1. Thomas, returned to England; died young; wife Susanna.
2. Rebecca, married to Edmund Freeman, Jr., April 22, 1646.
3. Hannah, married February 13, 1650, to Nathaniel Mayo; married a second time to Jonathan Sparrow.
4. MERCY, died in Eastham, Mass., Sept. 28, 1711, aged 80 years, as the wife of John Freeman, whom she married Feb. 13, 1649/50. He died Oct. 28, 1719, aged 98 years. (See Freeman Family.)
5. Sarah, married Jeremiah Howes of Yarmouth, 1650.

Thomas Prence's wife, Patience, died in 1634. He married 2nd, Mary, daughter of William Collier, April 1, 1635. They had the following children:

1. Jane, born Nov. 1, 1637, married January 9, 1661, Mark Snow.
2. Mary, married John Tracy of Duxbury.
3. Elizabeth, married Dec. 9, 1667, to Arthur Howland, Jr.
4. Judith, born 1645; married December 28, 1685, to Isaac Barker of Duxbury.

Thomas Prence was married a third time in 1662 to Mary (?) who was the widow of Samuel Freeman.

## REFERENCES :

Brewster Genealogy ;  
Freeman Genealogy ;  
History of Cape Cod, Vol. II, page 363.

(See Freeman Family.)

## REMICK FAMILY.

I. CHRISTIAN REMICH, the emigrant, was born in 1631, probably in Holland or England, as the name is of German extraction, and there are many of the name now living in Holland and Germany. There is a town named REMICH in the Duchy of Luxemburg, which was so named in the time of the Roman occupation; and probably the Remicks came from this town. Christian came to America when young, as he was living in the town of Kittery, Maine, in 1651, and continued there until his death, about 1710. He was one of the Proprietors of the town, and was granted a great deal of land in what are now the towns of Kittery, Eliot and South Berwick, amounting to about 500 acres; the most of which still remain in possession of his descendants and name. He was a smart and bright man for the times; was the town's surveyor for many years, treasurer, selectman (of which board he was chairman most of the time), and representative to the legislature. There are many of his letters and papers still preserved in possession of courts, towns and individuals. Mr. Walter Lloyd Jeffries, 126 Beacon St., Boston, has a letter which was written by Christian as chairman of the board of selectmen of the town of Kittery, to John Usher. It is dated June 29, 1688, and is about the taxes for that year of the town. His occupation was that of planter and surveyor. He married about 1654, Hannah —————, by whom he had 9 children, all born in Kittery, as follows:

1. Hannah, born April 25, 1656.
2. Mary, born August 7, 1658.
3. Jacob, born November 23, 1660; died June —, 1745, in Kittery.
4. Sarah, born July 16, 1663; died in 1722, in Berwick.
5. Isaac, born July 20, 1665; moved to South Carolina.
6. ABRAHAM, born June 9, 1667; married Elizabeth Freeman, 1692. She was born June 26, 1671. He died in 1705.
7. Martha, born February 20, 1669.
8. Joshua, born July 24, 1672; died in 1738, in Kittery.
9. Lydia, born February 8, 1676.

These four sons of Christian Remich were all fairly well educated for the times, as appears by their letters and signatures;

and their descendants have filled many positions of usefulness in the town, state and nation. One of the most distinguished was the late Chief Justice Morrison Remich Waite, but others will also now be mentioned. A grand-daughter of Joshua married Gen. Sullivan of the Revolution. David Remick, a grandson of Jacob, was a captain in the Massachusetts line at the capture of Ticonderoga and Crown Point in 1759, and was the great-grandfather of Gen. David Remick, who served in the Union Army, 1861-5. Major Timothy Remick, who served all through the Revolutionary War in Massachusetts regiments, and was on Washington's staff, was a grandson of Joshua above. Captain Benjamin Remick, who served in the Massachusetts and Continental navy in the Revolution, was a great-grandson of Jacob above. Benjamin Remick was also a celebrated naval constructor and ship-builder in New Hampshire and Maine. Among the more celebrated of his vessels was the sloop of war "Ranger", built in Kittery, Maine. She was the first man of war commanded by Capt. John Paul Jones, and sailed from Kittery, Dec. 2, 1777, and was the first American-built war ship to show the national flag in Europe, where it was saluted by the French Admiral, Feb. 13, 1778, in the Bay of Quiberon, being the first salute in Europe to our national flag by a foreign power. Capt. Benjamin was the master builder of over 50 vessels in his time.

II. ABRAHAM REMICK, son of Christian, married in 1692 or 3, Elizabeth Freeman, in Eastham, Mass. She was born June 26, 1671, daughter of Samuel and Mercy (Southworth) Freeman. Abraham settled in Eastham; was a planter, farmer and mariner, and died about 1705, probably in Eastham; his widow married second Joseph Myrick in 1712, by whom she had one daughter.

*Rebecca Myrick  
d. 17 Sept 1713*

Children of Abraham Remick and Elizabeth Freeman, all born in Eastham, Mass., were:

1. CHRISTIAN<sup>3</sup>, born December 16, 1694; died 1783, in Eastham.
2. Abraham, born May 20, 1696; died \_\_\_\_\_.
3. Mercy, born July 29, 1698; married Joseph Higgins, an ancestor of Chief Justice Morrison Remich Waite.

4. Elizabeth, born September 12, 1700; married Cornelius Knowles.

*5 Martha d. about 1712; m Seth Knowles*

III. CHRISTIAN REMICK, born December 16, 1694; lived in Eastham, and probably followed the sea most of his life, dying in Eastham in 1783. He married 1st, Hannah Freeman, in East-

ham, October 10, 1717. She was the daughter of Lieut. Edmond and Sarah (Mayo) Freeman of Eastham, and died in Eastham, July 7, 1751, in her 54th year.

Children of Christian Remick and Hannah Freeman, all born in Eastham, Mass., were:

1. Mercy, born November 30, 1718; married \_\_\_\_\_ Cooke.
2. Hannah, born November 21, 1720-1.
3. Elizabeth, born January 22, 1722-3.
4. Christian, born April 8, 1726, "The Painter," m. Sarah Freeman, Aug. 27, 1752.
5. Daniel, born July 11, 1729.
6. Isaac, born February 9, 1732-3.
7. Joseph, born March 21, 1738-9; died in infancy.
8. SARAH, born April 9, 1742; died January 20, 1773; married April 9, 1742, Nathaniel Attwood. He died July 20, 1773. (See Attwood Family.)
9. Joseph, born June 8, 1744.

Christian<sup>4</sup> Remick married ~~2nd~~, Sarah Freeman of Harwich, Mass., August 27, 1752. She was born in (1720), the daughter of Benjamin Freeman. ~~No children probably by wife Sarah.~~

*(b. 11 Mar 1719-20  
Harwich.)*

#### REFERENCES:

Remick Genealogy.

New England Genealogical Society Records, 1893, page 473.

History of District of Maine by James Sullivan, page 343.

(See Attwood Family.)

*Christian<sup>3</sup> m (2) wt 5 Aug 1760, Eastham, Mrs.  
Sarah Doane b 1698, d. 12 May 1773 at 67, Eastham  
It was his son, St Chris<sup>4</sup> who m Sarah Freeman*

## ROBBIN FAMILY.

Mathurine Robbin came from Mortagne in the Province of Perche, with her husband Jean Guyon, and their children. They sailed from Dieppe in a boat commanded by Capt. Nesle, arriving at Quebec, June 4, 1634. She married Jean Guyon in or about 1615, and died April 17, 1662.

## REFERENCE:

Etude Genealogique sur Jean Guyon par Louis Guyon.

(See Guyon Family.)

## MARIE ROLLET.

MARIE ROLLET was the wife of Louis Hébert, an apothecary to the King of France. She left Dieppe, France, on Feb. 25, with her husband and arrived at Port Royal, Nova Scotia, in June. She and the wife of M. Poutrincourt were the first two French women to land on this continent. The colony at Port Royal did not survive, the fort being burnt by Samuel Argall in 1613, thus forcing the colonists to return to France.

In 1617 Louis Hébert and his wife left Honfleur, France, for Quebec, with their family of three children, Guillaume, Anne and Guillemette. The trip took 13 weeks, the party finally landing June 14, 1617, after a stormy, dangerous passage. Louis Hébert died from the results of a fall on the ice and was buried in Quebec Jan. 25, 1627. Marie Rollet married second, May 16, 1629, Guillaume Hubon (gentleman). They probably had no children. He was buried May 13, 1653. Marie Rollet was buried May 27, 1649.

The children of Louis Hébert and Marie Rollet were:

1. Guillaume, born ?; married Oct. 1, 1634, Helene Desportes; born 1620. He was buried in 1639.
2. Guillaumette born 1606; married Aug. 26, 1621, Guillaume Couillard. She was buried Oct. 20, 1684.
3. Anne, born ?; married early in 1618, Etienne Jonquest. This was the first marriage in Canada. She died the following year and her husband shortly thereafter.

## REFERENCE:

Dictionnaire Genealogique Des Familles Canadiennes.

(See Hébert Family.)

## ST. MARTIN FAMILY.

MARTIN BOUTET SIEUR De ST. MARTIN, was a professor of Mathematics. He was probably in the pay of the Government and made maps and charts for the Government. He married Catherine Soulage.

He came to Quebec in 1645 from Saintes, France. He was the first secular teacher in Canada, in 1651. In 1664 he was a deputy to examine a mine in Quebec. He was also choir master in the Church where he accompanied the choir on the violin. He gave 60 livres to buy books for the choir. He lived in a house owned by the Jesuits at Quebec and received a number of presents from them.

His children were:

1. Catherine, bapt. 1637 at Xaintes; married 1st on May 19, 1654 to Charles Philippau at Quebec; 2nd Jean Soulard on May 8, 1666. She was buried June 1st, 1692.
2. Marie, bapt. 1644; became an Ursuline nun, Sister St. Augustin; buried Jan. 8, 1701.

## REFERENCES:

Dictionnaire Genealogique Des Familles Canadienne, page 81.

Ancestry of Genevieve Anthon, page 19.

Jesuit Relations

Vol. 27, - 113 - 314.

36, - 175 - 250.

30, - 155.

35, - 31.

42, - 277 - 285.

60, - 141 - 143 - 320.

69, - 288.

(See Soulard Family.)

## SEARS FAMILY.

The parentage, place and date of birth of Richard Sares are alike unknown.

His name is first found upon the records of Plymouth Colony, in the tax-list of March 25, 1633, when he was one of forty-four, in a list of eighty-six persons, who were assessed nine shillings in corn, at six shillings per bushel.

He soon after crossed over to Marblehead, in Massachusetts Colony, and was taxed as a resident of that place, in the Salem rate-list for January 1, 1637-8, and on October 14, 1638, was granted four acres of land "*where he had formerly planted.*" This would seem to indicate that he had then some family.

What his reasons were for removing can now only be conjectured. It has been suggested that he sympathized with Roger Williams and followed him in his removal, but this is improbable.

It may be that he wished to be near friends, former townsmen, or perhaps relatives.

Anthony Thacher, who in his will he calls "brother," was then living in Marblehead, and this fact offers the best reason for his removal.

The early settlers of Marblehead were many of them from the channel islands, Guernsey and Jersey, and in these places the family of Sarres has been established for several centuries, and is still represented in Guernsey under the names of Sarres and Serres.

It may be that Richard Sares was from one of these islands, and a thorough search of the records there might produce satisfactory results, otherwise there seems to be no clue, not even the slightest indication to the place of his nativity, and only a fortunate chance may enable us to trace his ancestry.

Early in the year 1639, a party under the leadership of Anthony Thacher crossed over to Cape Cod and settled upon a tract of land called by the Indians Mattakeese, to which they gave the name of Yarmouth.

With them went Richard Sares, accompanied probably by his wife and infant son, Paul. He took up a residence on Quivet Neck, between Quivet and Sesreit creeks, where in September of

the same year their daughter Deborah was born, perhaps the second white child, and first girl born there; Zachary Rider being supposed to have been the first boy.

His first house was built upon the southerly side of the bluff near the sea shore, where the cellar, a mere hole for vegetables some ten feet square, was pointed out to my informant early in this century.

At a later date he built again a short distance north-west from the ancient house built by Captain John Sears, *circa* 1704, which is still standing, and the site of this later residence is still recognizable.

His first house was, perhaps, what was called "a palisade house;" "such houses were built by placing sills directly upon the ground, in these, two parallel rows of holes were bored, some six inches apart, for the insertion of poles, the space between being filled in with stones and clay, openings being left for a door and windows.

"The roof was thatched with the long sedge-grass found in the meadows, and as a substitute for glass in the windows, oiled paper was used.

"The chimney was built of sticks, laid up cob-house fashion, and well daubed with clay, or mortar made from shells.

"A southerly slope for the house was preferred, and the back of the chimney was then hollowed out of the hill-side, thus saving some labor in building.

"The fire-place was of stone, some eight feet wide and four feet deep, and the mantel laid so high that a tall person could walk under it by stooping a little.

"The oven was often built upon the outside of the house with the mouth opening in one corner, on the back side of the fire-place. The fire was built in the center, and on a cold winter evening a seat in the chimney-corner was a luxury unknown in modern times.

"Straw or sedge-grass served for a floor and carpet.

"Some of the palisade houses built by the early settlers were the most comfortable and durable houses built.

"That of Mr. John Crow stood for nearly two centuries, seldom needing repairs, and in fact the last owners did not know the peculiarities of its construction until it was taken down. The walls of this house were plastered inside and outside with shell

mortar, and at some later period, it had been clap-boarded, thus concealing the original construction.”

Tea was unknown, and china and porcelain are not found in inventories before 1660.

Forks were not in use in England when the Pilgrims left, and chairs were articles of luxury, the use of stools being almost universal.

An idea of the household furniture may be obtained from the inventories printed later on.

In early colonial times a large family was considered a great blessing in a pecuniary point of view. The boys assisted the father on the farm, and at seventeen were able to do the work of a man. The girls were also brought up to more than earn their own living. They assisted the mother, spun and wove the flax and the wool, and made their own and their brothers' garments, and in hay-time and harvest assisted with their brothers in the fields.

A man with a large and healthy family of children was then the most independent of men. From his farm and his household he obtained an abundance of the prime necessities of life. The surplus which he sold was more than sufficient to pay the bills of the mechanic, and to buy the few articles of foreign merchandise then required.

Taxes were paid in agricultural products, at a rate fixed by law; and if land or other property was sold, unless it was expressly stipulated in the contract that payment should be made in silver money, it was a barter trade, payable in produce at “the prices current with the merchants.”

Aged people were wont to remark that their ancestors estimated that every son born to them added £100 to their wealth and every daughter £50.

However heterodox this theory may now appear to parents or to political economists, it was undoubtedly true in early times.

The Searses with but few exceptions all married in early life, had large families, acquired good estates, lived comfortably and were respected and honored members of society.

The early settlers were engaged principally in agricultural pursuits, stock-raising and fishing.

Many whales were cast upon the coast, and the shore was divided in sections, under the charge of whaling squads chosen by the town.

Capt. Paul Sears and Lt. Silas Sears belonged to one of these gangs, and some of Paul's whaling gear is enumerated in his will and inventory. Capt. John Sears was also engaged in whaling.

Oil, fish and tar were exchanged with the traders visiting the coast for goods which were needed, and which they did not themselves produce.

They traded in their own vessels with the West Indies, bringing home molasses and spirits, and built vessels which they themselves manned.

The Cape seamen have always been famed for their skill and daring.

At a later date John Sears invented the method of making salt by solar evaporation, and was the pioneer in an industry that added much to the wealth of the Cape, until superseded by the salt-springs of Syracuse, etc.;—and Elkanah Sears of Dennis was the first to set out cranberries at Flax Pond in 1819.

The Cape farms produced good crops of Indian corn, rye, barley and some wheat, and all sorts of vegetables; berries were plenty, and cranberries were indigenous.

Game was plenty, and with fish abundantly supplied the table; cows and goats were kept for milk, and bees for honey.

Beer was regarded a necessity, and each family brewed at regular intervals. Spirits were consumed in considerable quantities, and the names of many of the best citizens are upon record as "licensed to draw wine," etc.

The mothers of the town were expert in the use of the loom and made most of the cloth used in their families.

In the summer they wore home-spun linen, and in winter flannel.

The sails of a vessel built at Hockanum at the close of the Revolutionary war were made of cloth woven by them.

Clocks were at first unknown, a sun-dial cut upon the sill of a southern window gave them the time of day, and it was long customary to face the house due south.

In 1745, but one clock and one watch were taxed in the town of Harwich.

The observance of the Lord's day was rigidly enforced, and no one was allowed to labor, engage in any game or recreation, or travel upon that day, under penalties proportioned to the offense.

The tithing men appointed in each town had with other duties,

that of keeping order among the boys in church, and were armed with long rods, tipped at one end with a squirrel tail or rabbit's foot, for the purpose of awaking sleeping women, and at the other with brass or a deer's hoof, which they brought down with emphasis on the heads of male offenders.

The journey to and from meeting was, to many, long and tedious.

Those who had horses were wont to "ride and tie," *i. e.*, one would ride a specified distance, and then alight and fasten the animal, and proceed on foot, leaving the coming pedestrian to mount and ride for the next stage.

The women and small children rode on pillions behind their lords and masters, but the young people of either sex were expected to make the journey on foot, and no doubt with congenial company they found the miles short enough.

In winter the only mode of keeping themselves warm in meeting was by the use of foot stoves, or a hot brick or stone.

In the intervals between morning and afternoon service, the men and boys assembled outside to discuss town affairs, the prospect of crops, or fishing; while the women over their luncheon, in the meeting-house, or at some convenient neighbor's, had their gossip.

But to return to my narrative.

In 1643, the name of Richard *Seeres* appears in the list of "inhabitants of Yarmouth, between the ages of 16 and 60, liable to bear arms." June 3, 1652, Richard *Seeres* was "propounded to take up Freedom," and Richard *Sares* "took oath of Fidelity at Plimouth," June 7, 1653. Richard *Sares* was chosen Grand Juryman, June 7, 1652, and Constable, June 6, 1660.

June 3, 1662, Richard *Saeres* was chosen Representative to the General Court at Plymouth.

These are some of the early spellings of the name on the records, but in his will, and in the deed to him of Sesuit, his name is written *Sares*, and such I assume to have been the correct form of spelling and pronunciation in those days.

Why Richard *Sares* did not sooner apply to be made a freeman does not appear.

To become a freeman each person was legally required to be a respectable member of some Congregational church, and none but freemen could hold office or vote for rulers. Many people

avoided citizenship to escape petty offices and court duties which a freeman might not decline without suffering a fine, and the Government found it necessary to use persuasion and something like compulsion to lead desirable men to accept these duties and privileges.

It does not appear that Richard Sares was at first a member of the church in Yarmouth, and from the fact that he chose to settle upon the extreme verge of the town, near what was afterward known as the "Wing neighborhood," where Quaker meetings were sometimes held, it has been inferred that he perhaps had a leaning that way;—be this as it may, we find the name of Richard *Seares* as one of the Committee appointed Mar. 1, 1658, to levy church tax, and 30.4 mo. (June) 1667, the name of Richard Sares is signed with fourteen others to a complaint against Nicholas Nickerson for slander of Rev. Thomas Thornton.

The original document is now in possession of Mr. H. C. Thacher of Boston, and a reduced fac-simile of it may be seen in Swift's "Hist. of Old Yarmouth," 1884.

The name of Richard Sares is well and plainly written, but it is not certain that it is his autograph, (and no other is known,) as it and several others may have been written by one hand, such is their resemblance, one to the other.

The document is not a legal one, and it was not unusual for parties then, as now, to allow their names to be appended by others to such papers.

His will dated 10.3 mo. (May) 1667, and the codicil thereto, dated ten years later, viz., 3 Feb., 1676, are both signed with his mark, a by no means unusual circumstance in those days.

It will be noticed that he made his mark to his will a month previous to the date of the Thacher document, to which a full signature is affixed.

Mr. H. G. Somerby in his manuscript collections in the library of Mass. Hist. So. Boston, mentions a *tradition* that he held a commission in the militia, and lost his right arm by a gun-shot wound in a fight with Indians in 1650, but neither fact is recorded, nor is any such tradition known to Cape antiquarians. The mark appended to his will and codicil is apparently the letters R. S., one over the other. I infer that he had been able to write his name, but was then prevented by disability, perhaps rheumatism.

Oct. 26, 1647, he entered a complaint against Nepoytam, Sacha-

mus, and Felix, Indians; and Oct. 2, 1650, he with sixteen others complained of Wm. Nickarson for slander, damage £100, and at same term of court we find his name with seventeen others against Mr. John Crow, Wm. Nickarson and Lieut. Wm. Palmer for trespass, damage £60.

In 1664, Richard Sares, "husbandman," purchased a tract of land at Sesuit, from Allis Bradford, widow of Gov. Wm. Bradford, for the sum of £20. A copy of the deed, and of a quitclaim from her son, Major Wm. Bradford, to Paul Sears, will be found farther on.

On 10. 3 mo. (May) 1667, he made his will, to which he added 3 Feb., 1676-, a codicil which with the inventory are recorded in Ply. Rec., Book 3, Part 2, pp. 53-55.

Therein he mentions "wife Dorothy," "*elder*" and "*eldest* son Paule Sares," "youngest son Syllas Sares," "daughter Deborah," "son-in-law Zachery Padduck," and "Ichabod Padduck, son of Zachery Padduck," and requests "*brother* Thacher with his two sons as friends in trust," etc.

His inventory in the original record is footed up £169.06.06, a manifest error, the real estate alone being valued at £220, and the amount of the last item not being carried out.

Nor would the corrected sum represent his worldly condition fairly, as he had no doubt previously given to his children such portions of his property as he could conveniently spare.

In the proper places I give copies of the wills and inventories of Richard Sares and his sons, by a careful examination of which, the location of the original estates may be traced in part, and some idea be formed of the relative wealth and personal belongings of each.

It is to be regretted that no plan is now known to be in existence showing the bounds of the original estates in Yarmouth and Harwich, and recent attempts to construct such have not met with much success.

No gravestones remain to mark the burial places of Richard Sares and his wife, though they are supposed to rest in the ancient cemetery in Yarmouth, and they probably never had any inscribed stones; upright gravestones did not come in use in England until the time of Queen Elizabeth, and the early graves in Plymouth Colony were generally marked with a boulder.

Some years since, a granite monument was erected in Yarmouth cemetery by the late Hon. David Sears of Boston, which is popularly supposed to mark the spot of their interment, but I am informed by aged members of the family that it was really placed over the grave of Paul Sears, his gravestone being removed for the purpose, although it is highly probable that Paul was buried by the side of his parents.

There is no stone to his (Paul's) wife Deborah, nor to his brother Silas, whose burial-place is unknown.

The stone to Paul Sears records his death in 1707-8, and it is the oldest inscribed memorial in the cemetery, although Swift in his "Hist. Old Yarmouth," accords that credit to the gravestone of Col. John Thacher, who died in 1713.

There are no reliable traditions extant of Richard Sares and his family, and our only sources of information relative to them are the public records to which I have referred.

In Plymouth Colony, the governor, deputy-governor, and magistrates and assistants, the ministers of the gospel and elders of the church, schoolmasters, commissioned officers in the militia, men of wealth, or men connected with the families of the nobility or gentry, were alone entitled to the prefix, Mr., pronounced Master, and their wives, Mrs., Mistress.

This rule was rigidly enforced in early Colonial times, and in lists of names it was almost the invariable custom to commence with those who stood highest in rank, and follow that order to the end. Our forefathers claimed, and were cheerfully accorded the title due to their birth and position, and it is unwise to claim for them any title which they did not themselves assume.

I do not find that Richard Sares was given the prefix of respect, and in the town records it is written that his wife, "Goody Sares was buried Mar. 19, 1678-9."

He was a farmer, hard-working and industrious, an affectionate husband and kind parent, a God-fearing man, and respected by his neighbors.

His descendants showed good breeding, and many of them were prominent in church and town affairs, and in the militia.

Their names may be found in the records of the Indian and French wars, the Revolutionary war, and that of 1812. Numbers served during the late Civil war, and shed their blood freely for their country.

The family has always been very religious in its tendency, in latter years leaning to the Methodist and Baptist persuasions, and rather given to *isms*; some of its members have been foremost in the temperance and anti-slavery movements, but it has never given rise to any prominent politicians, and while holding many local offices, not aspiring beyond the State Legislature.

Of good stature, and comely appearance, they are healthy and long-lived, enterprising and esteemed citizens wherever found.

“Worth is better than wealth,  
Goodness greater than Nobility,  
Excellence brighter than Distinction.”

(Sears' Monument.)

I. RICHARD SEARS, parentage, place and date of birth unknown, (perhaps he was the son of John Bouchier Sears and Marie L. Van Egmont), died in Yarmouth, Plymouth Colony, and was buried August 26, 1676. His widow, Dorothy Thacher ? was buried there March 19, 1678-9. It is not certain that she was his only wife, or the mother of all, if any, of his children.

The children of Richard Sears were as follows :

1. CAPT. PAUL SEARS, born probably in Marblehead, Mass., after February 20, 1637-8; died at Yarmouth, Mass., February 20, 1707-8, in 70th year; married in Yarmouth in 1658, Deborah Willard, daughter of George Willard. She was baptized at Scituate, P. C., by Rev. Wm. Witherell, September 14, 1645; died at Yarmouth, May 13, 1721; (her mother was, perhaps, Dorothy Dunster.)
2. Lieut. Silas Sears, died at Yarmouth, Mass., January 13, 1697-8; married Anna ————— (perhaps Bursell, daughter of James Bursell of Yarmouth) who died a widow at Yarmouth, March 4, 1725-6.
3. Deborah, born at Yarmouth September, 1639; adm. 2nd ch. from 1st ch. Yarmouth, August 6, 1727; died there August 17, 1732 “within about one month of 93 years of age;” married 1659, Zachary Paddock, son of Robert and Mary Paddock. He was born at Plymouth, March 20, 1636; (his obit. says beginning of 1640, died Yarmouth May 1, 1726, ae. 88.) If he was born March 20, 1636, as stated in Plymouth Records, he would have been aged 91, but perhaps there were two Zacharys, the first dying in infancy.

The last Will and Testament of Richard Sares, of Yarmouth, late deceased, as followeth;—

In the name of God, Amen. I, Richard Sares of Yarmouth, in the Colony of New Plymouth, in New England, do this 10th day of the third month, Anno Dom. 1667, make and ordain this my last Will and Testament, in manner and form following:—

First,—I give and surrender up my soul to God that gave it, and my body to the earth, from whence it was, in comely and decent manner to be buried, &c.; and all my lands and goods as God hath given me, I give and bequeath as followeth:

First.—I give and bequeath, and my Will is, that Silas Sares, my younger son, shall have all my land, that is, all the upland upon the neck where his house stands in which he now dwells, thus bounded and lying between the cart pathways as runs through the swamp into the said neck unto the land of Peter Werden, and so all along by the lands of the said Peter Werden unto the meadows as are betwixt the said upland and the sea, and so as it is surrounded by the meadows unto the aforesaid cartpath as runs through the swamp aforesaid, after mine and my wife's decease.

To him, the said Sylas Sares, to him, and his heirs and assigns forever, (provided, and my will is, that whereas my son-in-law Zachery Paddock is possessed of, and now lives in an house that is his own proper right within the aforesaid tract of land, that he the said Zachery shall have and enjoy two acres of the aforesaid lands about his said house for and during the life of Deborah, his now wife; together with all ways, easements, and emoluments, to the same appertaining, without any molestation, and eviction or denial of him the said Silas, his heirs or assigns:.) And my will is, and I do hereby give unto the said Silas Sares, all that tract of meadow land, as is, and lyeth between the aforesaid neck of upland, and the river, commonly called and known by the name of Sasuett harbor, river bound: also thus from the Great Pine tree as bounds the meadows between the meadows of the aforesaid Peter Werden, and my meadows, unto a knoll of upland called the Island, towards the said harbour's mouth, to the said Sylas and his heirs and assigns forever, after mine and my wife's decease.

Further,—I do give and bequeath to my son Sylas, after mine and my wife's decease, as aforesaid, one half moiety of all that my land called Robins, as is unfenced.

I mean only one half moiety, and part of the upland.

To him the said Sylas, his heirs and assigns forever.

And my Will is, and I do give and bequeath unto my elder son Paul Sares, all the rest and remain of my lands, whatsoever, and every part and parcel of them whatsoever, after mine and my wife's decease, both upland and meadow lands, which I have not in this my last Will, disposed of.

To him, the said Paul Sares, his heirs and assigns forever.

And my Will is, and I do give unto Dorethy my wife, all my lands whatsoever to be at her dispose during her natural life, and I do give unto her all my other goods and cattle whatsoever during her life, and at or before her death, to give and bequeath them amongst my children, at her pleasure, who also I do make sole executrix of this my last Will and testament: and do intreat my brother Thacher, with his two sons as friends in trust, to see this my last will performed:

Furthermore my Will is, that whereas I have bequeathed to my two sons Paul and Silas all that tract of upland called Robins, as is unfenced, by an equal proportion between them, my Will is, I say, that my son-in-law Zachery Padduck shall have two acres of the said upland before it be divided as aforesaid during his said wife's life: and after the decease of his said now wife, my will is, and I do give unto Ichabod Padduck, the said two acres of Robins, and also the aforesaid two acres of land adjoining to the house of his father, Zachery Padduck during his natural life.

In witness whereof, I have to this my last Will and Testament set my hand.

In the presence of

ANTHONY THACHER

ANTHONY FREY

The marke of

RICHARD (RS) SARES.

Anthony Frey testifieth to the former part of this Will that he saw Richard Sares sign it as his Last Will and Testament, this second day of March, 1676.

Before me, JOHN FREEMAN, *Assistant.*

---

Be it known to all to whom these presents shall come, that I, Richard Sares of Yarmouth, in the Colony of New Plymouth, as in this my will before mentioned, being now weak in body, but of perfect sense and memory, do by these presents ratify and con-

firm my Will, as it has been made on the other side, bearing date the 10th of the third month 1667.

And I do add hereto as followeth, that at my wife's decease my eldest son Paul Sares shall have and enjoy to his own proper use, the house which I now live in, and my bed and the bedding thereto belonging, and my clothing, and the cattle that shall be left at my wife's decease, and also my warming pan, and the earthen pott with the cover that belongs to it, and the iron pot and the table: and in witness hereof I have hereunto set my hand and seale, this third day of February Anno Dom. 1675.76.

In the presence of                      The mark of (RS.) RICHARD SARES.

JOHN THACHER  
JUDAH THACHER

---

I, John Thacher do testiify, that myself and by brother did set our hands as Witnesses to this Will, as being his last Will and Testament, and when my Uncle signed this Appendix to the Will, he delivered the Will to me, and desired me to new draw the whole Will, and to leave out of the new draft, the legacy of land that is given to Ichabod Paddock, for saith he, I have anseized it in another way, but if I die before you have done it, then it must go as it is; and trouble took me off so that I did not redraw the will.

I having thus explained myself, do testify that this Will is the last Will and Testament of my Uncle Sares, so far as I know.

This fift of March 1676.

Mr. John Thacher attested to this Will before me,

JOHN FREEMAN, *Assistant.*

---

October the Eighth day in the year of our Lord, one thousand, six hundred and seventy six,

This being a true Inventory of the Estate of Richard Sares, lately deceased, according to our best information and judgment, taken by us whose names are under written, as followeth:

	£	s.	d.
Imp. his house and land. . . . .	220	00	00
Item, five cows. . . . .	10	00	00

Item, 1 bull, 1 heifer of three years and vantage. . . . .	03 10 00
Item, 1 heifer of two years and vantage. . . . .	01 10 00
Item, 5 years olds. . . . .	05 00 00
Item, 2 calves. . . . .	01 00 00
Item, his bed and the furniture thereto belonging. . . .	08 07 00
Item, more, 2 pairs of sheets . . . . .	02 15 00
Item, 2 sheets, and 2 pairs of drawers. . . . .	01 01 00
Item, 1 table cloth, 1 pillow beare, 1 napkin, 3 towels. .	00 08 00
Item, britches and hat. . . . .	02 03 00
Item, his coat and cloak. . . . .	02 00 00
Item, 1 pair of stockings and shoes. . . . .	00 05 00
Item, 1 great Bible and other books. . . . .	01 03 00
Item, pewter and tin. . . . .	01 03 00
Item, brass. . . . .	00 06 00
Item, 1 pair of stilliyards. . . . .	00 15 00
Item, iron furniture for the fire. . . . .	00 12 00
Item, more on rugg. . . . .	00 04 00
Item, 2 chests. . . . .	00 16 00
Item, 1 beer barrel & one earthern pott. . . . .	00 04 00
Item, 3 chairs. . . . .	00 07 00
Item, his bees. . . . .	01 00 00
Item, other householdments. . . . .	00 08 00
Item, more, two waistcoats. . . . .	00 12 00
Item, 1 mare and colt. . . . .	00 10 00
Item, debts in cash. . . . .	01 19 00
Item, more, 2 Indian trays. . . . .	

---

169 06 06

Thomas Boardman  
 Lancher Winslow  
 Samuel Worden

This 15th day of November 1676.

Dorothy Sares the relict of  
 Richard Sares, and Paul Sares  
 his eldest son, made their appearance  
 and gave oath to the truth of this  
 Inventory above written  
 before me,           JOHN FREEMAN, *Assistant.*

Plymouth, ss. Apl. 24, 1883. The foregoing is a true copy from Plymouth Colony Records, Vol. III of Wills; folios 53, 54, 55.

Attest, WM. S. DANFORTH, *Reg.*

II. CAPT. PAUL SEARS, born probably in Marblehead, Mass., after February 20, 1637–8; died in Yarmouth, Mass., Feb. 20, 1707–8, in 70th year, gr.–st.; married in Yarmouth, 1658, Deborah Willard, daughter of George Willard; she was baptized in Scituate, Plymouth Colony, by Rev. Wm. Witherell, Sept. 14, 1645; died in Yarmouth, May 13, 1721; (her mother was, perhaps, Dorothy Dunster).

Paul Sears took the oath of "Fidellyte" in 1657, held a commission as captain in the militia, and made claim for a horse lost in the Narragansett war, but I find no record of his services. October 30, 1667, he was one of the grand jury, in an inquest held on the child of Nicholas Nickerson. He was one of the original proprietors of lands in Harwich, between Bound and Stony Brooks, known as "Wing's Purchase," as appears by deed of John Wing et als., to Paul Seers, et. als., dated April 16, 1677, recorded at Plymouth.

The early town records of Yarmouth were destroyed by fire at the burning of the town clerk's house in 1674, and from the succeeding volume the first twenty-six pages are gone, and others mutilated and worn.

The names and dates of birth of his children have been supplied from various sources, and are believed to be correct.

I annex copies of the will and inventory of Paul Sears;—the will is signed with his mark, as is also the inventory of John Burge's estate, rendered by him, and recorded Barns. Rec. II, 1701, p. 130.

He left property valued at £467 03 03, to his "loving wife Deborah," and to his sons, "Samuel, Paul and John;" that to his sons being charged with a payment to "*their brothers*, Richard and Daniel, towards their purchase of lands at Manamoy;" having given to his daughters, (whose names are unfortunately omitted,) "such parts or portions as I was able or thought fitt."

In the ancient cemetery in Yarmouth lies a stone slab, removed from its place to make room for the granite monument to the Seares, which bears the following inscription, surmounted by a cherub's head and scroll work:

“HERE LYES THE  
 BODY OF PAUL  
 SEARS, WHO  
 DEPARTED THIS  
 LIFE FEBRUARY YE  
 20TH 1707, IN YE 70TH  
 YEAR OF HIS AGE.”

It is the oldest dated memorial in the cemetery.

His wife was doubtless laid by his side, but there is no stone to her memory.

George Willard, the father of Paul Sears' wife, was the son of Richard and Joane (Morebread) W., of Horsmonden, Kent, Eng., where he was bap. Dec., 1641; he settled at Scituate for a time, removing thence it is said to Maryland. There is some reason to believe that his wife was Dorothy Dunster, dau. of Henry D., of Baleholt, near Bury, Lanc, sister to Eliz'h D., who m. his bro. Simon Willard; and to Rev. Henry D., Pres. of Harvard College. [See Willard Mem., 1858, p. 339.]

Paul Sears was the first to adopt the present spelling *Sears*.

His Will was as follows:

“In the name of God, Amen, the Twentieth Day of February, 1707–8.

I, Paul Sears, Senr. of Yarmouth, in ye County of Barnstable, in New England, being at this time ill and weak in body, but of Disposing mind and memory, Praised be God, Do make, Constitute, ordain and Declare this my Last Will and Testament, in manner and form following:

First, and principally. I Comitt my soul to God, most humbly depending upon the gracious Death and merits of Jesus Christ my only Lord and Savior for Salvation, and to the free pardon of all my sins. And my Body to the Earth to be buried in such Decent Christian manner as to my Executors hereafter named shall be thought fitt.

And as for my outward Estate, as Lands, Chattels and Goods, I do order Give and Dispose in manner and form following;

First,—I will that all those Debts and Duties that I owe in Right or Conscience To any person whatsoever shall be truly paid in convenient time, after my Decease by my Executors hereafter named, out of my movable Estate.

Item,—I do give and bequeath to my eldest son Samuel Sears, all that my land and meadow in the township of Harwich upon part whereof his house now stands as is comprehended within and between the boundaries now following: (that is to say,) bounded on the east by Kenelm Winslow's Land at ye known and accustomed bounds; and on the west side beginning at a remarkable rock, (lying about four Rods eastward from Yarmouth bound Rock at bound brook,) and from the sd Remarkable Rock the line runs Southerly over the Swamp and up ye hill to a great Pine tree marked in sd Yarmouth line: and thence up ye same straight line Southerly to the highway: and thence eastward as the way runs to ye said Winslow's Land, (the sd highway being the bounds on ye south side) And the beginning again att ye sd Remarkable Rock the line runs northerly to a stone sett in ye ground: and thence easterly to the edge of ye marsh by a straight line to another stone sett in to the ground, and so bounded by the marsh to another stone sett in the ground northerly on a straight line to a bend of ye main Creek at a stone sett in the Marsh, and on the north side tis bounded by the known and accustomed bounds: and of my interest in the undivided lands in sd Harwich, viz.: that is my sd son Saml. shall have sixteen acres to himself in ye next Division (ye proprietors make of the undivided Lands) and the one half of all the rest of my interest there. All which sd Lands and Meadows shall be to my sd son Samuel Sears, and to his heirs and assigns forever, he yielding to his mother, my wife, one third part of ye proffits thereof during her natural life, and also paying to his two brothers Richard and Daniel, forty and two pounds in money towards the paying their purchase at Manamoy. I do give him my Try pott and Kettle.

It.—I do give and bequeath to my son Paul Sears and to his heirs and assigns forever, one peice of fresh meadow called the Green Meadow which lyeth on the north side of my old house and is bounded eastward at ye Well or Spring, then westward taking in all ye Marsh or ground to ye old cartway (which leads into ye neck) on Joseph Sears fence: thence northeastward as the sd old cartway and fence runs to Zachariah Paddocks fence or line which is ye bounds on ye north side to bound brook, the sd bound brook and well or spring being the bounds on the east side, and also one quarter part of my interest of the undivided Lands in sd Harwich (besides the above sd Sixteen acres given to my son Samuel,) and

for the rest of my son Paul's land is in ye neck where he now dwells, and by me confirmed by Deed of Gift formerly, and my Will is that he shall yield to his mother, my wife, one third of the proffits or income of all I have given him, during her natural life, and that he shall pay to his two brothers Richard and Daniel, forty and four pounds in money towards the paying their purchases att Manamoy.

My will further is that the Ditch which hath been the accustomed bounds in the marsh betwixt my son Paul, and my kinsman Josiah Sears shall remain forever; beginning southerly att ye upland and running straight northerly to the Creek which did run on ye north side of ye island, which creek shall be the north bounds:

And my Will is, and I do give all that slip of meadow on the West side of ye sd ditch unto the said Josiah Sears, his heirs and assigns forever.

It.—I do give and bequeath unto my son John Sears, and to his heirs and assigns forever, all the rest of my Homestead, both housings, lands and meadows, also one quarter part of all my interest in the undivided lands in ye sd Harwich, excepting the sixteen acres before given to my son Saml—he my sd son John allowing and yielding to his mother, my wife, the one third part of my Housing, and the third of the proffits of ye lands during her natural life, and he paying to his two brothers Richard and Daniel, forty and four pounds in money towards their purchase att Manamoy.

It.—I do give and bequeath all my movable Estate as Cattle, sheep, horses, swine and household stuff &c, unto my loving wife Deborah, (my Debts and Funerall charges being first paid.) She shall have the rest for her comfort while she lives: and what she leaves at her death to be equally divided amongst my daughters to whom I have to each of them given such parts or portions as I was able or thought fitt.

Lastly,—I do nominate and appoint my sd son Saml Sears and my Loving Wife Deborah executors to this my last will and testament.

In witness whereof, I have hereunto sett my hand and seal ye day and year in ye other side first above written.

The mark and seal of  
Paul (=) Sears, Senr. (seal)

Signed, sealed & declared in presence of

JOHN THACHER  
ZACHARIAH PADDOCK  
SAMUEL HOWES.

Barnstable, ss. April 14, 1883. A true copy of the record, Attest, FREEMAN H. LOTHROP, *Register of Probate Court*.

A true inventory of all and Singular ye Goods, Chattels, Housing, Lands and Credits of Paul Sears yeoman, deceased, prised at Yarmouth, ye 19th day of March 1708: By Peter Thacher & Kenelm Winslow, as followeth:

	£	s.	d.		£	s.	d.
Impr.—his money	1	17	6	his apparell of all sorts			
	10	9	0	.....	11	18	6
It.—Two feather beds, two other beds, bedstead, curtains and valance with bolsters, pillows, and all ye coverlids and sheets.....					21	13	6
It.—Table and chairs	1	4	0	andirons, trammels iron potts & pot hooks.....	03	08	06
				Tongs, & fire flue, iron kettles, skillets, frying pans...	03	02	06
It.—Brass kettle, warming pan, hitchell, stillyards chests and boxes.....					02	06	00
It.—Spinning wheels 10s pewter platter, plates cups & potts .....					01	17	00
It.—Koolers, pails, trays, trenches & spoons, table linen & towels.....					01	02	00
It.—his saddle, bridle, pilyon, & cloth, flax & linen yarn .....					02	00	00
It.—Cash, candlestick, lamp, draving knife axes, sickle & hoes.....					00	17	00
				a sifting trough, wool, five washing tubs knife, scissors, Looking glass.....	00	09	00
It.—Salt & feathers, and iron wedge, ye iron belonging to ye cart, and plows and spade a staple and cap ring, & caps & ring.....					02	19	06

It.— 4 bushels Rye, 24 of Indian, 3 of Wheat and ½	
his books .....	05 00 00
Tobacco, 10s pitchforks, powder horn, bullets, and	
sword .....	00 17 00
Grindstone, and tin ware, 2 oxen, 5 cows, 2 steers..	23 05 00
It.— 2 yearlings, a bull and one horse, 3 swine, 25	
sheep .....	11 05 06
It.— his housing, lands, and meadows at 350.....	350 00 00
more about 3 acres of English corn upon ye ground	
not prised.	
	The total..... 445 07 09
	now due to ye Estate about..... 21 15 06

April 8th, 1708.

Samuel Sears Executor to the last Will and Testament of Paul Sears of Yarmouth his deceased father, before Barnabas Lothrop, Esq., Judge of Probate and granting letters of Administration, within this County of Barnstable, made oath that the above written is a true Inventory of ye Estate of ye sd Paul Sears so far as he knows, and that if any thing else that is material shall yt farther come to his knowledge he will bring it to this Inventory.

Attest WM. BASSETT, Reg.

PETER THACHER,

KENELM WINSLOW, Jun.

Barnstable, ss. April 14, 1883. A true copy of the record.  
Attest, FREEMAN H. LOTHROP, *Register of Probate Court.*

Capt. Paul Sears and his wife Deborah Willard, had the following children:

1. Mercy, born Yarmouth July 3, 1659; "13 yrs. old, 3 July, 1672."
2. BETHIA, born Yarmouth January 3, 1661-2; "11 yrs. old, 3 Jan., 1672;" died Chatham, Mass., July 5, 1724, ae. 63, gr.-st.; married May 27, 1684, John Crowell, Jr. of Nobscussett. He was born in 1662 and died Oct. 11, 1728.

(See Crowell Family.)

3. Samuel, born Yarmouth January 31, 1663/4.
4. A daughter baptized Yarmouth, Oct. 24, 1666, perhaps Lydia; married Eleazer Hamblen, born April 12, 1668; died about 1697; married 2nd Thomas Snow, son of Mark and Jane Prence Snow.

5. Paul, born Yarmouth, June 15, 1669; "3 yrs. old, 15 June, 1672."
6. —ry (Mary or Margery), born Yarmouth, Oct. 24, 1672; is thought to have been Mary, wife of Col. John Knowles of Eastham, who died in 1745; ae. 77, (if copy of the epitaph on her gravestone be correct,) but the age does not agree with that of her birth as recorded.
7. Ann, born Yarmouth March 27, 1675; died November 14, 1745 in 71st year, gr.-st., Truro; married John Merrick of Harwich, January 28, 1703.
8. John, born Yarmouth, 1677-8; died April 9, 1738, in 61st year, gr.-st.
9. Richard, born Yarmouth, 1680-1; died May 24, 1718, in 38th year, gr.-st.
10. Daniel, born Yarmouth, 1682-3; died August 10, 1756, in 74th year, gr.-st.

(See Crowell Family.)

## SOULAGE FAMILY.

CATHARINE SOULAGE was the wife of Martin Boutet de St. Martin. She is sometimes called Catharine Deschamps. (I think this confuses her with another woman who married Michel Boutet and is not correct.)

The children of Martin Boutet and Catharine Soulage were:

1. CATHARINE, born 1637 at Xaintes; married 1st May 19, 1654 Charles Philippau at Quebec; married 2nd May 8, 1666 Jean Soulard. She was buried June 1, 1692.
2. Marie, born 1644; an Ursuline nun called St. Augustine; buried January 8, 1701.

## REFERENCES :

Dictionnaire Genealogique Des Familles Canadiennes, Vol. I, page 81.

(See St. Martin Family.)

## SOULARD FAMILY

JEAN SOULARD born in 1638? was an armourer. He was the son of Jean Soulard and Jeanne Couvreur of St. Sauveur in the Parish of La Rochelle. He married at Quebec March 8, 1666 Catherine Boutet, widow of Charles Philippaux. She was buried June 1st 1692. Jean Soulard her husband was buried July 9, 1710.

The children of Jean Soulard and Catherine Boutet were:

1. JEANNE, bapt. Dec. 4, 1666; m. July 13, 1682 Guillaume Baudry.
2. Jean Joseph, bapt. March 6, 1666; buried April 7, 1682.
3. Marguerite Catherine, bapt. March 13, 1669; married 1st March 5, 1696 Pierre Vachon; 2nd June 25, 1705 Louis Garnault at Beauport, Canada.
4. Martin, (bapt) Sept. 12, 1670.
5. Jean, bapt. and buried Dec. 28, 1671.
6. Jeanne Genevieve, bapt. April 9, 1673; m. Feb. 5, 1711, Dominique Aussion; she was buried May 14, 1739.
7. Anonyme bapt. and buried Feb. 18, 1673.
8. Jean, bapt. Sept. 9, 1675, buried Oct. 28, 1687.
9. Jean Baptiste, baut. Oct. 12, 1678; married 1st Françoise Comeau; 2nd Barbe Garnaud March 31, 1717 at l'Ange Gardien; he was buried May 15, 1723.

## REFERENCE:

Dictionnaire Genealogique Des Familles Canadienne, Vol. I, page 552.

(See Baudry Family.)

## SOUTHWORTH FAMILY.

I. EDWARD SOUTHWORTH was born about 1590 in England, and married in Leyden, Holland, May 28, 1613, Alice Carpenter, daughter of Alexander Carpenter of Wrington (or Wrentham), England. He died in London, England, in 1620 or 1621. His widow married second in Plymouth, Mass., Aug. 14, 1623, Govr. William Bradford, a former suitor. Edward Southworth, while in Holland, was a silk worker and one of the Pilgrim exiles who formed Rev. John Robinson's Church. In 1620 he was residing at Henige House "in the Duke Place," London, as Robert Cushman addressed him there in a letter written from Dartmouth, England, Aug. 17, of that year, telling of the bad condition of the Ship Speedwell, which was to accompany the Mayflower.

His wife was born about 1590 and died in Plymouth, Mass., in 1670. When she came to New England in 1623, to marry Govr. Bradford, she left her two sons, who came over in 1628, with George Morton and his wife, who was her sister Juliana. Her will is dated Dec. 29, 1669, and was proven in Plymouth, June 7, 1670. Issue of Edward and Alice Southworth, born in Leyden, Holland: Constant, Thomas.

A small Southworth Genealogy by Rev. Stocking traces the ancestry of Edward Southworth back to many kings and queens. This book was issued about 1899. The Southworth Genealogy by Webber, published in 1905, on page 419, states that the parentage of Edward Southworth is not known with absolute certainty, and disproves in the book, his parentage as given in the Stocking edition. He reaches what he considers a reasonable conclusion, which the compiler of these notes has decided not to use.

II. CONSTANT SOUTHWORTH, son of Edward and Alice (Carpenter) Southworth, was born in Leyden, Holland, in 1615, and married in Duxbury, Mass., Nov. 2, 1637, Elizabeth Collier of that place. He made his will in Duxbury, Feb. 27, 1678, and his inventory was taken the following March 15, he dying March 10, 1679. His wife survived him. He was Deputy from Duxbury to the General Court of Plymouth Colony, 1647, 1649-1656, 1658-1669; Treasurer of the Colony, 1659-1678; Governor's Assistant, 1670-1678; Ensign of Duxbury Company, 1646; Member of the

Councils of War of 1658, 1667; Commanding General in King Philip's War of 1675/6.

Children of Elizabeth Collier and Constant Southworth were:

1. Edward.
2. Nathaniel, born 1648.
3. William, born 1659, died young.
4. MERCY, born about 1638 and died Nov. 25, 1712, as the wife of Deacon Samuel Freeman, born May 11, 1638, whom she married May 26, 1658. (See Samuel Freeman.)
5. Alice, married Dec. 26, 1667 Benjamin Church.
6. Mary, married David Alden.
7. Elizabeth, married William Foles.
8. Priscilla.
9. William.

#### REFERENCES :

- Southworth Genealogy by Webber, pages 1-8, 29-33, 419.  
 Freeman Genealogy, page 357.  
 Savage, Vol. IV, page 143.

(See Samuel Freeman.)

## STEVENS FAMILY.

RICHARD STEVENS was born about 1688. After his marriage to Abigail Treat, Oct. 27, 1708, he lived at Truro, Mass., where he was admitted an inhabitant, May 10, 1710. He was one of the proprietors of the meadows and beaches at Eastern Harbor, and one of the selectmen of Truro in 1720. The family has always been a prominent one in town. The place where his house stood is still known as Stevens' bank. Mrs. Stevens was admitted to full communion in the church July 13, 1712.

Children of Richard Stevens and Abigail Treat, his wife, were:

1. Levi, born Sept. 27, 1709; bapt. July 13, 1712, died ——?
2. Richard, born Sept. 4, 1711; bapt. July 13, 1712; died Dec. 26, 1792; married 1st June 11, 1741 Mary Gross; 2nd, Nov. 10, 1768, Mary Nickerson.
3. Joanna, born Aug. 4, 1713; bapt. Aug. 30, 1713; died ——?
4. ABIGAIL, born March 14, 1714–15, bapt. April 24, 1715; died 1760; married Nathaniel Atwood 1735. He was born 1713; died 1769. (See Atwood Family.)
5. Jerusha, born January 17, 1716–17; bapt. March 17, 1716–17; died Nov. 30, 1788; married about 1736 (pub. Feb. 26, 1735–6) Benjamin Collins.
6. John, born ——; bapt. Dec. 7, 1718; died in infancy.
7. Mary, born ——; bapt. July 23, 1721; died ——?
8. John, born ——; bapt. Sept. 23, 1722; died Nov. 6, 1790; married 1st, April 15, 1742, Joanna Smith; 2nd, Nov. 15, 1744, Betty Mayo.

Richard Stevens was probably the son of John Stevens of Marblehead.

## REFERENCES:

Treat Genealogy, page 190.

History of Truro, pages 100–101, 163, 225.

Mayflower Magazine, Vol. 4, page 32.

Letter of Arthur W. Ackerman, dated Oct. 11, 1929.

(See Atwood Family.)

## THE STOUTENBURG LEGEND.

JOHAN VAN OLDEN BARNEVELDT, born September 14, 1547, Dutch Statesman, had two sons and two daughters by his wife, Maria Van Utrecht. He was unjustly beheaded by Maurice of Nassau, May 12, 1619.

His two sons were later involved in a plot to kill Maurice of Nassau, the Statholder of Holland. Reimie, Lord of Groenwald, the elder was beheaded May 1623. William, Lord of Stouten Brugh, who seems to have been a man of light character, escaped to Brussels and was taken under the protection of the Arch Duchess, Isabella. Later he became a Roman Catholic and under the Spaniards, his country's enemies, he was a Captain of horse. He died in Antwerp. He married Walbrug de Marnix and they had one son (this is the legend) Pieter, born 1635; died March 9, 1699, who migrated to America.

## REFERENCES :

- Encyclopaedia Britannica, 11th Edition, Vol. 20, page 69.  
Van Roon's History of the Netherlands.  
National Biography Universelle.  
Motley's "John of Barneveldt."

## STOUTENBURGH FAMILY.

I. PETER STOUTENBURGH or Van Stoutenburg or Van Stoutenburgh was probably an honest Dutch burger, who came to this country. His last name was assumed by him to distinguish him from the many other Peters. Perhaps, as the legend says, he was the son of William, Lord of Stoutenburg and Walbrug de Marnix, his wife, but I believe that if some one were to go to a small town in Holland called Stouten Burg, they would find a record of a Peter born about 1630 or before who migrated to New Amsterdam. The "Van" in his name shows his origin. If we follow the legend and place his birth in 1635 it is difficult to figure out how, at the age of 14, he could have married and how he came to this country alone at 10 or 13 years of age and how in 1651, aged 16 years, he bought and sold lands and gave powers of attorney. To correct this error, in another version of this legend he is made the youngest son of John of Barneveldt. (See A Documentary History of the Dutch Congregation, Oyster Bay, Queens Co., Island of Nassau, now Long Island, N. Y., Vol. II, pages 521-2.) This is a good idea, but John of Barneveldt only had two sons, as far as history goes. He did, however, have two daughters if one of them was the Eva who was a witness at a baptism April 30, 1659, perhaps the legend has some foundation.

PETER VAN STOUTENBURG, as he was called, came to New Amsterdam some time between 1645 and 1648, married July 25, 1649, Aefje Van Tienhoven, sister of Cornelius Van Tienhoven, Secretary of the Province under Kieft and Peter Stuyvesant. Peter Stoutenburg on March 28, 1651 bought and sold lands and gave a power of attorney; on April 17, 1657 he was admitted as a great Burgher of New Amsterdam. On September 5, 1664 he signed a remonstrance to the Director General of Council for not preventing the English from coming up the Bay unchallenged. He was elected Schepen August 16, 1673. Bought lot No. 3 Broadway, May 22, 1674. He died on March 9, 1699.

Peter Stoutenburgh and Aefje Van Tienhoven had the following children:

1. Enjeltie, bapt. Aug. 20, 1651; died young.
2. Enjeltie, bapt. Jan. 5, 1653; admitted to the Reformed Dutch Church 28, July, 1670; married 10 February, 1671 William Waldron.

3. Pieter, ? bapt. December 13, 1654; died young.
4. Jannetje, bapt. August 30, 1656; admitted to the Reformed Dutch Church March 4, 1675; married July 27, 1679 Albertus Ringo.
5. Wyntie, bapt. May 8, 1658; died young.
6. Tobas, bapt. January 18, 1660; admitted to the Reformed Dutch Church March 5, 1681; married July 20, 1684 Anneken Van Rollegom.
7. Wyntie, bapt. Oct. 15, 1662; admitted to the Reformed Dutch Church Sept. 4, 1679; married Nov. 3, 1680 William Van Echtsveen; married 2nd, Evert Byvang. She is mentioned as widow of Gerit Cornelis Van Exween. (See N. Y. Historical Society Collections, Vol. 1892, pages 214-15.)
8. Lucas, bapt. January 10, 1666; died young.
9. ISAAC, bapt. Sept. 26, 1668; married July 2, 1690 Neeltje Uyttenbogart. She was born April 7, 1667. She died Oct. 3, 1731. He died Sept. 11, 1711; will proved Nov. 27, 1712.

II. ISAAC STOUTENBURGH, of this place (New Amsterdam) son of Peter and Aefje Van Tienhoven, baptized Aug. 26, 1668 (witnesses, Jacob Kip and Tryntie Roelofs, daughter of Anneke Jans); married July 2, 1690, bans published June 11, Neeltje Uyttenbogart of Mispit Kill; she was buried Oct. 3, 1731. His will dated Oct. 12, 1698; proved Nov. 27, 1712 (R. L. 8, fol., 170, N. Y.) Witnesses: Cornelis Van De Water, Dirck Uyttenbogart, Rip Van Dam.

They had nine children baptized before 1703, all of whom apparently died young except two boys. The census taken in 1703 is as follows:

"Isaac Stoutenburgh, North Ward.

"1 male. 16 to 60.

"1 Female.

"2 male children.

"0 Female children.

"All above 60, one male."

April 24, 1710, he apprenticed a Palatine girl, named Catrina, age 15; her mother was Widow Lizard.

Children of Isaac Stoutenburgh and Neeltje Uyttenbogart were:

1. Willemetje, bapt. April 16, 1691; died young.
2. Pieter, married Margarita Varick. Born Nov. 12, 1692.

3. Gysbert, bapt. Oct. 21, 1694.
4. Isaac, bapt. May 17, 1696; died young.
5. Luykas, bapt. May 16, 1697.
6. Isaac, bapt. Sept. 4, 1698; died young.
7. Eva, bapt. Sept. 9, 1699; died young.
8. Eva, bapt. Feb. 2, 1701; died young.
9. Neeltje, bapt. June 28, 1702; died young.
10. Maria, bapt. Sept. 26, 1703.
11. ISAAC, married Anneke Dally. He was born April 7, 1705; died Jan. 28, 1770.
12. Jacobus, born Oct. 26, 1706; died young.
13. Hanna, born August 5, 1708.
14. Jacobus, born Jan. 22, 1710; married Maria Turk; died 1784. Will proved May 21. (See N. Y. Historical Society Collections, Vol. 1903, page 310.)

III. ISAAC STOUTENBURGH, of the North Ward, son of Isaac and Neeltje Uyttenbogart, baptized April 8, 1705, in New York. (Witnesses, Jacob Van Derse and Saratje Van Dam); married October 29, 1733, Anneke Dally, Sept. 12, 1737, he signed the petition for the removal of Wm. Crosby, Sheriff. Jan. 21, 1738, was a member of a Foot Co., Capt. Jos. Robinson, in New York. No. 4 on the Co. list. In 1758 he was assistant engineer of the Fire Department, with Isaac, Jr., of the West-Ward. By profession he was a gunsmith as his Uncle Jacobus was. His will, dated January 5, 1770, was as follows:

“In the name of God, Amen. I, Isaac Stoutenburgh, of New York, gunsmith, at present weak and low. After paying all debts, I leave to my son Isaac £20, as being my only son and heir at law. I leave to my wife, Annake, the rents and profits of all real and personal estate during the time she remains my widow for the support of herself and my daughter Cornelia. And if my wife should die or remarry, my executors are to sell all real and personal estate, and from the proceeds pay to my daughter Cornelia, £120, in lieu of an outset, having heretofore given the like sums to each of my other children, and the remainder to my son Isaac, and my daughters, Neelye, Cornelia and Annake. My other children are to take the share of my daughter Cornelia, and allow her the interest on it, ‘it being for her support and maintenance.’

I make my wife and son and my daughters, Neeltje and Annake, executors.

Witnesses, Francis Borrea, Francis Borrea, Jr., John Bogart, Jr. Proved, April 20, 1770."

(The daughters were then Neeltje Hyer and Annake Stagg.)

(Note: The son, Isaac Stoutenburgh, was a very prominent man in the days of the Revolution, and was one of the Commissioners of Forfeiture.)

Children of Isaac Stoutenburgh and Anneke Dally were:

1. Neeltje, bapt. August 25, 1734; married a Mr. Hyer.
2. Cornelia, bapt. July 11, 1736; died young.
3. ISAAC, bapt. March 18, 1739; married Elizabeth Will January 29, 1761. She was born 1738.
4. Cornelia, bapt. April 5, 1741; died after January 5, 1770.
5. Anneke, born Oct. 20, 1743; married John Stagg.
6. Philippus, bapt. July 6, 1746.
7. Eva, bapt. July 13, 1748.

IV. ISAAC STOUTENBURGH, son of Isaac and Anneke Dally, married January 29, 1761, Elizabeth Will.\* Her will, as widow, dated December 28, 1810; proved May 21, 1811 (R.L. 49, fol. 217, N.Y.). Isaac Stoutenburgh was Major of 2nd Battalion of New York City Militia, Col. Hyer's Regiment; Lieutenant Colonel of Colonel Wm. Malcolm's Regiment, New York Militia in 1775; member of New York Provincial Congress from 1775-1777; member of New York Council of Appointment from 1775-1777; member of State Senate from 1778-1787. (See Calendar of New York History, Vol. I., pages 233, 245, 317; Vol. II., page 37; also New York Civil List, pages 412, 416, 453-4.) He died intestate. Letters of administration given to his wife Elizabeth, son John, and son-in-law, John Hone, January 20, 1800.

Children of Isaac Stoutenburgh and Elizabeth Will were:

1. Isaac, born Nov. 5, 1761.
2. Joanna, born February 17, 1763; died July 8, 1764.

---

\* Will, not Wall. See Dutch Church Records, page 205, Vol. I., New York Genealogical and Biographical Society.

3. JOANNA, married Nov. 29, 1786, John Hone. She was born June 26, 1765 and died April 2, 1838. He was born 1764 and died April 12, 1832. (See Hone Family.)
4. John, born January 1, 1767.
5. Pieter, born March 24, 1769; died Oct., 1769.
6. Ann, married James Abbott. She was born December 4, 1771; died 1834.
7. Henry, married \_\_\_\_\_, Helena Bogart. He was born October 2, 1775.
8. Elizabeth, married Oct. 23, 1794, Abraham Brower. She was born May 25, 1777.

## REFERENCES:

- A Documentary History of the Dutch Congregation,  
Oyster Bay, Queens County, Island of Nassau, now  
Long Island, N. Y., Vol. II., pages 506-8, 521-24.  
New Amsterdam and its People, page 57.  
New York Historical Society Collection, 1906, page 262.  
" " " " " 1898, page 356.  
Stokes' Iconography of New York, Vol. VI, page 584.  
Scrap Book of Mr. Stuyvesant Fish.

(See Hone Family.)

## TAPP FAMILY.

EDMUND TAPP was in Milford, Conn., in 1639; wife's name not known. He was one of the founders of the Church there and one of the Seven Pillars on October 24, 1605. He died about 1653. His will is dated April 1, 1653. His daughter, Jane, died April 8, 1703. She was the wife of Governor Robert Treat of Connecticut. (See Treat Family.)

## REFERENCES:

Genealogical Dictionary of New England, Vol. IV, page 253.

Treat Genealogy, pages 133-4.

## TREAT FAMILY.

## I.

RICHARD TREAT was the son of Robert and Honora or Honour Trott, and the grandson of Richard and Joanna Trott, all of Pitminster. His great grandfather was probably William Trott of Staplegrove, and his great great grandfather, John Trott, also of Staplegrove. He was baptized under the name of Trott, married under the name of Trett; his children were baptized by the names of Trott and Tratt, and he was called Treat when he died.

RICHARD TREAT was born 1584, in Pitminster, probably in the hamlet of South Trendle, now the parish of Trull, Somerset, England; baptized in Pitminster church, August 28, 1584; died \_\_\_\_\_, 1669-70, in Wethersfield, Conn., was alive Oct. 11, 1669, and the inventory of his estate was presented to court, March 3, 1669-70; married April 27, 1615, in Pitminster, Alice Gaylard, who was baptized May 10, 1594, in Pitminster, when her name was spelled Gaylaud, and the daughter of Hugh Gaylard, who was buried Oct. 21, 1614, in Pitminster, and whose will is recorded in the Taunton Probate Court in 1614, but has utterly perished. When Alice Treat died is unknown, but she survived her husband. The tradition that Alice was a second wife, and that the name of the first wife was Joanna, who was the mother of Mr. Treat's children has proved, upon investigation, to be unfounded. The name of Hugh Gaylard appears in the Taunton Manor Register, 1573, Poundisford, for two Messuages and two Furlongs of Boundland, and two acres of Overland in Smalecrosse, and one acre of Overland in Lakemead, in the Tything of South Trendle, late of Nicholas Gaylard, and the said Hugh first, surrendered one acre of Boundland called Southgrove in Tything aforesaid, by surrender of John Gaylard (? Johane, widow of Nicholas) to hold to said Johane a Messuage and land for residence, &c. His name also appears in the Calendars in 1574, '81, '88, '92, '94, '96. Oct. 4, 1608, he surrendered a Close called Smalerest in the Tything of South Trendle, to son George Gaylard.

Children of Richard Treat and Alice Gaylard, born and baptized in Pitminster, England:

1. Honor, born \_\_\_\_\_, 1616; bapt. Mar. 19, 1615-16; died ? ; married about 1637, John Deming.
2. Joanna, born 1618; bapt. May 24, 1618; died Oct. —, 1694; married \_\_\_\_\_, John Hollister.
3. Sarah, born \_\_\_\_\_, 1620; bapt. Dec. 3, 1620; died ? ; married about 1644, Matthew Campfield.
4. Richard, born \_\_\_\_\_, 1622-3; bapt. Jan. 9, 1622-3; died about 1693; married about 1661, Sarah Coleman.
5. ROBERT, born \_\_\_\_\_, 1624-5; bapt. Feb. 25, 1624-5; died July 12, 1710; married 1st \_\_\_\_\_, Jane Tapp, 2nd Oct. 24, 1705, Mrs. Elizabeth (Hollingsworth) Bryan, daughter of Michael Powell, of Boston.
6. Elizabeth, born \_\_\_\_\_, 1627; bapt. July 25, 1627; died ? ; married about 1649, George Wolcott.
7. Susanna, born \_\_\_\_\_, 1629; bapt. Oct. 8, 1629; died \_\_\_\_\_, 1705; married about 1652, Robert Webster.
8. Alice, born \_\_\_\_\_, 1631-2; bapt. Feb. 16, 1631-2; buried Aug. 2, 1633, in Pitminster.
9. James, born \_\_\_\_\_, 1634; bapt. July 20, 1634; died Feb. 12, 1709, in his 75th year; married Jan. 26, 1665, Rebecca Lattimer.
10. Katharine, born \_\_\_\_\_, 1637; bapt. June 29, 1637; died ? ; married Nov. 29, 1655, Rev. William Thompson, or Tomson, of New Haven, by Gov. John Endicott, at Boston, according to the Boston records. He was the son of William and Abigail Thompson, who came from England about 1637, and settled in Braintree, Mass.

## LIFE AND CHARACTER OF GOV. ROBERT TREAT.

---

 BY HENRY CHAMPION, ESQ.
 

---

## II.

When Milford was settled in 1639, one of those who came from Wethersfield was Robert Treat, a young man not more than eighteen years of age.<sup>1</sup> He was not enrolled among the planters, but his name appears immediately afterwards with eight others<sup>2</sup> not in church fellowship, and therefore without the requisite qualification for freeman. We are not informed why he left his home, but as during the stay of Rev. Mr. Prudden in Wethersfield many of the inhabitants had formed so strong an attachment for him, that they followed him to Milford, we may well suppose Robert to have been actuated by the same impulse, and indeed tradition vaguely hints that he was a member of Mr. Prudden's family.<sup>3</sup> "He was," says Lambert,<sup>4</sup> and Hollister repeats the story,<sup>5</sup> but on what authority I do not know, "at the first meeting of the planters chosen to assist in surveying and laying out the township." It is not at all unlikely that he did assist, being a young man by no means indolent, but the persons chosen for that purpose are expressly directed to be church members,<sup>6</sup> and this, as we have seen, Robert Treat was not; nor did he unite with the church until after his marriage, in 1649.<sup>7</sup> Lambert also gives him the credit of being town clerk from 1640-8,<sup>8</sup> but this must be mere tradition. The first notice which the Milford records take of him after the enrolment of his name, is his appointment in 1652, with several others to survey a piece of land. The New Haven colonial records do not mention his name before 1644. The unfortunate loss of records that exists from that date till 1653, leaves a blank that cannot be filled up, but it is probable that the young man had gradually been rising more and more

---

<sup>1</sup> He could not have been more than sixteen.—J. H. T. <sup>2</sup> Milford Records. <sup>3</sup> Lambert's Hist. of New Haven, 137. <sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, 137. <sup>5</sup> Hist. of Conn., 1: 369. <sup>6</sup> M. R. <sup>7</sup> First Church Rec. <sup>8</sup> Hist. 97.

into notice, and in 1653, he was chosen deputy to the General Court<sup>9</sup> for Milford. The next year Milford honored him further by choosing him their lieutenant, and the General Court confirming the choice, declared him "the chiefe military officer there for the present to order ye military affaires of that towne."<sup>10</sup>

In 1655, a number of persons purchased land at Paugasset, now Derby, and asked and received, from the General Court, permission to establish themselves at that place without being under the jurisdiction of New Haven or Milford,<sup>11</sup> but upon the strenuous opposition of Milford, and especially of the two deputies, Robert Treat and Thomas Buckingham, together with Rev. Mr. Prudden, who made it evident that the proposed settlement would narrow too greatly their bounds, the Paugasset settlers agreed to sell their purchase to Milford if that town would furnish them with "comfortable accommodations for their subsistence." This Milford was unable to do, professing to have no meadow to dispose of, but Robert Treat settled the matter by offering seven acres of his own land for their use.<sup>12</sup> He had now become an extensive landholder, though he had no assignment of land in the first distribution,<sup>13</sup> but lived upon the land of his father-in-law, Edmund Tapp, and had large grants of land made to him from time to time.<sup>1</sup> In 1659, he had the further privilege granted him of taking shares in the distribution of some public land on behalf of his children, and this was extended to all such distributions a few years later,<sup>2</sup> an honor granted to no one else in the colony.

Milford received a reprimand for requiring their lieutenant "to watch as other men," from the General Court, in 1655.<sup>3</sup> He was chosen by his townsmen several times to purchase and divide public lands.<sup>4</sup> He assisted in 1660, at the installation of Rev. Roger Newton, Mr. Prudden's successor, being one of the laymen chosen to perform the ceremony of laying on of hands,<sup>5</sup> and held the post of deputy for Milford until 1659, with the exception of one year, and then being elected magistrate he served for five years on the Governor's Council, when, though re-elected, he declined to serve.<sup>6</sup> In 1661, the first serious trouble in the quiet life of the New Haven Colony arose, and gave to the General Court more perplexing duties than the usual business of punishing criminals, deciding disputes, and electing officers.

<sup>9</sup> New Haven Colony Records, 2:2. <sup>10</sup> *Ib.*, 99. <sup>11</sup> *Ib.*, 156. <sup>12</sup> N. H. C. R., 2:178-9. <sup>13</sup> Lambert, 90.

<sup>1</sup> M. R. <sup>2</sup> *Ib.* <sup>3</sup> N. H. C. R., 2:177. <sup>4</sup> M. R. <sup>5</sup> Lambert, 102. <sup>6</sup> N. H. C. R., 2:543.

On May 17,<sup>7</sup> the Deputy Governor (Governor Newman having died the December previous), called in haste a meeting of the General Court and laid before them a copy of a letter from the King, Charles II, commanding the arrest of the regicides, Judges Goffe and Whalley. The magistrates and deputies all professed themselves utterly ignorant that they were in the colony. "They wished a search had been sooner made and did now order that the Magistrates take care and send forth warrent" for "a diligent search." Robert Treat in pursuance of this order issued and signed a writ commanding certain inhabitants of Milford to make diligent search throughout that town for "Colonell Whalley and Colonell Goffe," doubtless well aware that no search however diligent would find them at that time within the town limits. They subsequently resided there for some time, however, and numbered Robert Treat, tradition says, among their select acquaintances and friends.<sup>8</sup>

Soon after, the threatened subjection of the New Haven jurisdiction to Connecticut, called for the exercise of all the statesmanship of the colony. In this Robert Treat took an important part. He was a man of considerable note, having been chosen captain by Milford<sup>9</sup> and by the colony, in 1661-2, as a substitute for either of the commissioners to the United Colonies,<sup>10</sup> though he had no occasion to act. He must have been second to none in the colony, unless we except the Governor, William Leete and a few others, as Mr. Gilbert, Mr. Crane and Mr. Fenn.

He was peculiarly fitted to engage in the task of uniting and harmonizing the two colonies, from the circumstances of his birth and connections. His father was an important and honored member of the Connecticut colony, for many years a magistrate, a patentee, at the special request of Connecticut, in the new charter under which the two were to unite, and this request may have been dictated by his connection through his son with the New Haven jurisdiction. His brothers and brothers-in-law too, were no unknown persons,—Richard, jr., and James Treat, John Hollister and John Deming, the last also a patentee,<sup>11</sup>—and are constantly named in the colonial records. Matthew Campfield of New Haven, another brother-in-law, was also a patentee in the charter. By his own marriage he had connected himself with an influential

---

<sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, 389. <sup>8</sup> Hollister, 1:244. <sup>9</sup> N. H. C. R., 2:410. <sup>10</sup> *Ib.*, 402, 451. <sup>11</sup> Conn. Col. Rec. 2:3.

settler, Edmund Tapp, one of the chief men, and one of the "seven pillars" of the first church in Milford.

And here perhaps it may be as well to go back and look at his private life, what little there is known of it. He was married about 1647 to Edmund Tapp's only daughter Jane. The tradition mentioned by Lambert,<sup>1</sup> though comparatively well known, must not be omitted here. One day when calling upon the elder, he took Jane upon his knee and commenced to trot her. "Robert," said she, "Be still that, I had rather be *Treated* than trotted," which hint led to his proposal of marriage, and she soon became Mrs. Treat.<sup>2</sup> He seems to have taken up his abode with his father-in-law, as his homestead stood upon the lot originally granted to Edmund Tapp.<sup>3</sup>

Whether the insinuation of Jane Tapp had any reference to the old name of Trott, I leave for the consideration of any who wish it. Tradition leaves us in the dark in regard to his family affairs hereafter, and the Milford records give us all we know. According to these, up to the time of the union of the two colonies, he had eight children, four boys and four girls, all of whom, with one exception, lived to become substantial citizens of this and other colonies. Goodwin's Notes<sup>4</sup> give two other daughters who died in early life, but there is no record authority for them, much less for the absurd story which credits him with the number of twenty-one, accounted for by Savage<sup>5</sup> on the ground that some of his grandchildren had been counted in, and the only solution which I can offer is, that some enthusiastic genealogist had counted all the children of Robert Treat he could find on the Milford records, as the Governor's including even some of his great grandchildren, which would just about complete the requisite number.

---

<sup>1</sup> Lambert, 137. <sup>2</sup> It is a tradition that Robert Treat was married at a spinning bee on Christmas night at the house of Edmund Tapp. Jane's eldest sister had already married Wm. Fowler. On this occasion, he is said to have trotted Jane. The "togglor" having become cool Robert Treat seized the andirons and heated the flip. The old "flipdog" or "togglor" was bequeathed to Elder Daniel Buckingham who married Hannah, daughter of Wm. Fowler, and preserved by him as a memento of the three families. Buckingham's grandson married in 1788 Susannah Fowler, a descendant of Wm. Fowler, and the "togglor" was brought out as the identical one used by Robert Treat at his wedding. It was always used on the anniversary of the Governor's wedding. It is now in the possession of Nathan G. Pond of Milford, who obtained it of Mrs. George Tibbals. It is said to be the only one now in existence.—J. H. T. <sup>3</sup> Lambert, 89, 93, 138. <sup>4</sup> Page 328. <sup>5</sup> Geneal. Dict.

He was an active participant in all that concerned the welfare of the town, and among other occupations found time to establish a fulling and grist mill.<sup>6</sup> And we must turn now to the part he took in the union of the two colonies. I cannot, of course, go into all the details of this matter, but it may be necessary to allude to the fact that Connecticut had, through their agent Governor Winthrop, procured a charter so framed as to include within its bounds the territory of New Haven and the towns under its jurisdiction, and this without their consent in any way expressed or implied. As a natural consequence the New Haven colonists were sorely tried and grieved, and resisted the efforts of Connecticut to either compel or persuade them to submit, and in the end it was mainly the pressure of outside danger that caused the union. In Oct., 1662, correspondence was commenced between the two colonies, and was carried on from time to time, mainly by the Governor and Council, on the part of New Haven. One is tempted to think that the hand of Robert Treat can be seen in the construction of many of the documents sent to Hartford. Moderate and cool in determining his course, but inflexible when once he had settled upon it, as his whole course shows him to have been, much of the correspondence shows these two traits of character in a remarkable degree. His signature is that of a cool and collected, though resolute person, and compares favorably with any of the other autographs appended to the letters to Hartford.<sup>7</sup> In 1663, Mr. Treat was again chosen magistrate for Milford,<sup>8</sup> and was also mentioned in a communication from Hartford as one who should have "magistraticall powers" in that part of the colony in event of a union.<sup>1</sup>

The matter was delayed another year, and in May, 1664, Governor Leete, having sent to the colony of Massachusetts for counsel and receiving word that they had appointed a committee to confer with them on the subject of their differences with Connecticut, sent Robert Treat and William Jones to meet the gentlemen from Massachusetts.<sup>2</sup> They returned without accomplishing anything, and meanwhile circumstances were rendering any other issue than the Union entirely hopeless. Mr. Treat, with his townsman Benjamin Fenn, were upon the election day, three weeks after, again elected as magistrates for Milford, but Mr. Treat declined to hold the office,<sup>3</sup> doubtless believing that he could better

<sup>6</sup> Lambert, 118. <sup>7</sup> C. C. R., 2: 469. <sup>8</sup> *Ib.*, 488.

<sup>1</sup> N. H. C. R., 2: 494. <sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 542. <sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, 543.

assist his country in other positions. Connecticut now assumed the government, and invested several persons, among them Mr. Treat, with "magistratical power" in the towns of the New Haven jurisdiction.

This power, however, was never exercised, unless indeed in Milford, which submitted on its own account, doubtless by Mr. Treat's advice, about a month afterwards. This act was much disliked by their neighbor of New Haven, but they also, deserted by the rest, finally yielded "as from a necessity brought upon us by their means of Connecticut aforesaid," and appointed the General Court as a committee, adding Robert Treat<sup>4</sup> and several others, a committee to consummate the agreement of Union. This committee engaged in a very amicable correspondence, resulting in the settlement of all difficulties, and the authorizing all the officers of the old colony to act until the next election.

At the same time the General Court of the now United Colonies nominated most of the old New Haven magistrates for election as assistants,<sup>5</sup> but for some reason or other Mr. Treat failed to gain the election. Perhaps the part he had taken had made him too many enemies, but it is more than probable, that already contemplating a move to New Jersey, he declined an office in the United Colony, since the Union, though he had assisted in it, was not founded upon the strict principles in which he had been brought up, and must have been disagreeable to him. He does not seem to have lost favor with the General Court, for he was very soon appointed captain of the Train Band of Milford, in view of the expected attack of the Dutch from New York, and was also selected as one to watch for and give notice of the approach of the enemy.<sup>6</sup> In 1665, he was elected as Deputy to the General Court,<sup>7</sup> and the succeeding year nominated an assistant,<sup>8</sup> but again either failed of an election, or refused the place, and from this time for several years his name disappears from the colonial records. But he was busy elsewhere. Many of the inhabitants of Milford and the other towns, disliking the Union forced upon them by Connecticut, assisted by untoward circumstances, and hearing that the colony of New Jersey offered favorable opportunities for establishing their peculiar form of mixed ecclesiastical and political government, in 1666, sent Robert Treat and two or

---

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, 551. <sup>5</sup> C. C. R., 2:30. <sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, 21. <sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, 23. <sup>8</sup> *Ib.*, 31.

three others to investigate and, if possible and desirable, to make preparation for the founding of a new town in that place.

They selected what is now Newark for the site of their town, purchased it from the Indians—satisfying a doubtful claim to a part of it rather than enter into a conflict—and made all necessary preparations for the arrival of the settlers. Early in May, some of the settlers came and established a “Godly Government” upon the spot. Robert Treat, with ten others, five being a quorum, was chosen to act in settling the place and preserving order.<sup>1</sup> A year after, all the emigrants arrived and the lots already laid out were divided, those from each town taking lots in a group by themselves. But first the neighbors of Milford and New Haven gave way that Captain Robert Treat should choose his lot, which being done, and two more acres than the average being given to him, the remainder was distributed evenly among the rest, six acres each.<sup>2</sup> Thus they honored their pioneer.

Here, as in Milford, he was foremost whenever bounds were to be settled. Elizabethtown, their nearest neighbor, had a dispute with Newark concerning the extent of their respective rights, and commissioners from Elizabethtown met Robert Treat and others from Newark, empowered to settle the dividing line upon a hill, thence called Divident hill, where the captain first lifted up his voice in prayer, “that there might be a good agreement between them,” and the line being run, the completed task was closed by John Ogden of Elizabethtown giving thanks for their loving agreement.<sup>3</sup>

In New Jersey there was a general assembly or colonial legislature, and to this for five years, from 1667–1672, Robert Treat was annually chosen deputy by Newark,<sup>4</sup> having already acted first as their town clerk.<sup>5</sup>

In 1672, he returned to Connecticut.<sup>6</sup> What his reasons were cannot of course be known, but while it seems unlikely that he had even intended permanently to settle there, for I cannot learn that his whole family moved, or that he sold his Milford property, yet it may have been that he found that not even in New Jersey could he find that perfect liberty he desired, and preferred to end his days in his old home. He left two of his children, however, as pledges of his interest in the welfare of the town, his son John

<sup>1</sup> Stearns' Newark, 6–14. <sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 20. <sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, 40. <sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, 52. <sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, 32. <sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, 32, 33.

and daughter Mary, wife of a prominent citizen of Newark, and he left, too, a cherished memory, that is not yet quite extinguished from the minds of the inhabitants of Newark.

Upon his return he was immediately called upon by the General Court to act as second in command of the forces of New Haven County in the anticipated conflict with the Dutch,<sup>7</sup> and at the next election was chosen assistant,<sup>8</sup> which office he filled for the three ensuing years, and in that capacity formed one of what is known as the "Committee of safety,"<sup>9</sup> often appointed during threatening times to act while the General Court was not in session. He was placed in command of all the New Haven County forces, 120 men,<sup>10</sup> and second to Maj. John Talcott in command of the Connecticut force,<sup>11</sup> which they expected to send against New York, but the peace of 1673 rendered these preparations needless, and the militia was disbanded.

Though released from military duties, he did not remain idle. He is one of a committee to run the lines of Norwalk, Stamford, Greenwich, and Rye;<sup>12</sup> to settle a dispute in Saybrook about common lands; "to hear the Indian complaints and draw the same to an issue;"<sup>13</sup> to settle the bounds between New Haven and Milford;<sup>14</sup> and he seems to have been especially relied upon in matters of this nature. He is sent with several others "to improve there best abilities and endeavours to settle an accomodation between the people and minister of Fayrefeild . . . and to endeavour allso the obteyning and settling of a minister at Rye."<sup>15</sup> His private offices were very numerous. As trustee, executor, appraiser, etc., he appears many times upon our probate records and it would not be too much to say that hardly an estate of consequence in Milford was settled from 1670 to 1700, without some allusion to him in its progress. He was often called upon also to perform the marriage ceremony, for couples in those times went oftener to the magistrate than to the minister, and he seems to have been universally relied on by persons in all walks of life as one whose honor and integrity were supported by wisdom and prudence.

The opening of the year 1675 brought upon the colonies at once two direful evils, either of which alone had been a blow severe

---

<sup>7</sup> C. R., 2: 83. <sup>8</sup> *Ib.*, 291. <sup>9</sup> *Ib.*, 204. <sup>10</sup> *Ib.*, 207. <sup>11</sup> *Ib.*, 218. <sup>12</sup> *Ib.*, 203. <sup>13</sup> *Ib.*, 225. <sup>14</sup> *Ib.*, 233. <sup>15</sup> *Ib.*, 240.

enough to threaten their existence. These were the one external, the other internal; the first personified in Sir Edmund Andros, the second, in King Philip.

The limits of this sketch will not justify any account of the causes or history of these two perils, save in so far as they are connected with Robert Treat, and as he was the principal actor in King Philip's war. I will relate his part in that without noticing the contemporaneous disputes with Andros till afterwards. The colony of Plymouth was the first to suffer from the Indians in this new outbreak, and the alarm and destruction soon spread to Massachusetts and Rhode Island, while as yet Connecticut was unmolested, and at liberty to use all her strength against Andros.<sup>1</sup> In the middle of September, however, the commissioners of the United Colonies ordered 1000 men to be raised,<sup>2</sup> and the Governor and Council of Connecticut commissioned Major Treat as commander-in-chief of the quota of Connecticut. This commission I have ventured to copy at length, for it shows exactly the trust and confidence reposed in him, and with the annexed instructions is of considerable general interest. It is as follows:<sup>3</sup>

“To Major Robt Treat

“You being nominated and appoynted by the Councill of Connecticut, August 25, 1675, Commander in Chiefe of such forces as are sent forth from this Colony to assist and defend or confederates of the Massachusetts in the persuit or prosecution of these Indian enemies that are in open hostility against the English, These are in his Maj'ies Name to will and require you, and you are hereby commissioned to take under your conduct, charge, and gouernment, all the sayd military forces with all such armes, ammunition, provisions and other appurtenances, with all officers and soldiers, to be ordered, martialled managed and dissposed of upon all occasions by yourself and the council of warr according to the course of military discipline, and according to such instructions as you shall herewith receiue and from time to time receiue from them till you shall return agayne. You are allso hereby impowered with the councill of war to use and execute martial discipline upon all offenders and delinquents, as occasion shall be, by fines or other military punishments if need shall require. We doe appoynt your commission officers to be your councill, whereof

---

<sup>1</sup> Trumbull, Hist., ed. 1797, 1: 343-349. <sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 353. <sup>3</sup> C. C. R., 2: 356-7.

yourselfe is to be president and have a casting voyce. And you or your council, or the greater number of them, shall haue power from time to time, as a councill of war, to manage all affayres concerning this present expedition; and you may joyne in councill with such other of the Gentln of the Massachusetts as shall be empowered to joyn in councill with you, and to take their assistance with you in the pursuit of the enemie; and you are according to your best skill to take all fitting wayes and meanes and opportunities to destroy the enemie; and in want of any officers in your army, you, with your councill are hereby authorized to make up such defects or vacancies. You are also impowered to use any stratagems of war for aduantage against the enemie, and to induce or draw of parties or persons from them upon just and honble terms of concession or quarter as you may: provided that grand contriuers and murtherers be exempted from pardon, and due satisfaction made for other wrongs when proved against them."

To this commission a series of instructions were added, commencing, "Forasmuch as the most holy and just God for our many and great sins hath seen cause to exercise New England, by letting loose the barbarous heathen to commit outrage, murther, and spoyle," and then ordering the Major where to go, and how to coöperate with the "Bay forces." He was especially "to see well to the carriage and behauior of all under his command, that it be sober, Christian and comely, both in words and deeds according to the Gospell profession, before the heathen and in the sight of all men; that so the name of our God be not dishonoured by ourselves while we are endeavoring to vindicate the same against the heathen's wickedness and blasphemies." He was further to "improue the best of his skill to preserve the lives and limbes" of his soldiers, and to take special care that the Reverend Mr. Whiting (their Chaplain) be "accomodated with the best supplies and in the greatest security."<sup>1</sup>

Armed with this commission and with such designs, he took a portion of the quota of Connecticut to the north to assist in the defence of some of the Massachusetts towns. There he arrived in season to render that colony the eminent service of saving the town of Springfield from utter destruction. Deerfield had just been sacked and burned; a body of the best young men from the county, "the flower of Essex," employed in guarding a train of

---

<sup>1</sup> C. C. R., 2: 357.

wheat-laden wagons on their way to Hadley had been attacked and barely rescued from destruction by the timely arrival of the Major on his northward march, and the Indians having devastated the regions around these towns, now plotted the destruction of Springfield. Major Treat, after a campaign of hard marching and fighting, now lay at Westfield, fifteen miles the other side of the Connecticut. Informed by a friendly Indian of the contemplated attack, he started at night, but being delayed for want of boats in crossing the river, he was not in season to prevent it. Many houses had been burned, much property destroyed, and several lives lost, for the inhabitants were in no condition to successfully resist, but the arrival of the troops turned the tables. The enemy were routed, and Springfield saved from destruction.

This defeat paralyzed the Indians for awhile, and Major Treat returned home. At the next General Court in October, he appeared before them and laid down his commission. It is not possible to ascertain his reasons for this, but it is most likely that having been appointed only by the governor and council, he was unwilling to serve without the assent of the whole court in whom the charter had vested the government of the militia. They, however, would not accept the resignation, but voted that "having considered the same doe thankfully accept of the good service the Major hath done, and have taken so good satisfaction in the Major's good conduct that they doe desire and order Major Robert Treat to continue his regiment ouer the forces of this Colony rayed for the prosecution of the enemie and do order the continuance of his commission granted as before by the Council."<sup>2</sup> One would look for a vote of thanks from Massachusetts, as the greatest benefits of the Major's "good service" resulted to them, but it was never given.

At the same session, Oct. 14, he was ordered to Norwich, but intelligence arriving that the danger was over, he was sent instead to the north again.<sup>3</sup> On the 19th, 800 Indians attacked Hadley, but Major Treat, by a hurried march, arrived just in time to turn their victory into defeat, and so fearful a chastisement did he inflict upon them that from that time they were unable to carry on the war in the neighborhood, except in small parties, and in a desultory manner, against which the settlers were able to defend themselves.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 266. <sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, 264-5. <sup>4</sup> Trumbull, 1: 352.

Major Treat's attention was now directed to another field of conflict by the General Assembly. The Narragansetts in Rhode Island had engaged in acts of amity and friendship toward Philip and his scattered warriors, and of hostility towards the English, in violation of their solemn engagements with the colonies. In order to strike an effective blow at the whole Indian combination, a winter campaign was ordered by the Commissioners of the United Colonies. A large army was raised by the three colonies, which rendezvoused at Pettyquamscott in Rhode Island, and started on the morning of the Sabbath, Dec. 19, as soon as it was light, Major Treat with his 450 men from Connecticut, 135 more than her quota, forming the rear guard of the expedition. At one o'clock they reached the Indian fort, where were congregated nearly all the Indian forces in that part of the country, the destruction of which was the object of this march, and a principal object of the whole campaign. It was a palisaded enclosure in the midst of a swamp, accessible only by a long log raised five or six feet from the ground, and without artillery. No way was left to gain it but by a charge across that log, and the troops from Massachusetts, in the vanguard, no sooner had arrived, than they threw themselves upon the fort with great spirit. They crossed the log bridge exposed to a murderous fire from within, entered the fort, and had almost gained it, but were finally driven back, so fierce was the fire of the Indians from every side. At this juncture the Major arrived with the Connecticut forces, and sending a handful of his bravest men to discover some other approach, and make an entrance if possible elsewhere, in his turn attempted the perilous charge. There was a block house just inside the entrance to the palisades, which the Massachusetts troops had been unable to pass, but the Major's men succeeded in passing it, though with great loss, and the few who had been sent around having found an entrance by almost impenetrable paths now joining them, they were enabled to attack the Indian defenders in the rear. This added to another vigorous charge from the Massachusetts and Plymouth troops, completely routed the enemy, and the battle ended in their almost entire annihilation. But Connecticut had suffered severely, losing nearly half of all that were killed or wounded in the whole encounter. Four of their five captains were slain, and a large number of their best men. The major was unhurt, but a bullet hole through his hat attested his presence. He is said by the General Assembly to have had "no less than

seventeen fair shots at the enemy," and to have been thereby as often a fair mark for them. He was the last to leave the burning fort in the darkness of the winter's evening, and it was to the bravery of his troops, and his forethought in sending a few men to enter elsewhere that the capture of the fort was due.

The large losses of his troops and a due regard to "the lives and limbs" of his remaining soldiers induced him to lead them home in order to recruit, and to place the wounded in more favorable circumstances. Leaving the Massachusetts and Plymouth troops to finish the war, he returned to New London, capturing on his way a number of the enemy,<sup>1</sup> and remained there with his troops for some weeks, with the exception of a visit to Hartford early in January to consult with the governor and council,<sup>2</sup> and of a visit to Milford, at the same time. From New London, after his return, he writes to the General Court, then in session, and as this is the first letter of his that is now in existence, so far as I know, I have ventured to copy the principal part of it under date of "N. London 23d instant, at night 1675."<sup>3</sup>

He says "Honord Gentlemen: Through much trouble & difficulty, I am so far got ready as that I intend, God willing, to begin my march tomorrow. The trouble and difficultys wth such comandars, to prepare for my service is almost too hard and heavie for me: and if you had appointed me a victualler of your army, I hope I might have done something at it. Our part of ye westerne forces are arrived the last night, and ye vessell prepared to saile, and I heare wth about 5000 of bread & 20 barrels of beefe and porke, a hogshead of rum, but no wine, and some small necessaries . . . We are fully purposed if weather prevent not to be setting forth this day from N. London. . . . I am for want of clark, commissary & others so little forwarding me, as that I cannot enlarge, but beg yo<sup>r</sup> prayers to y<sup>e</sup> God of wisdom, courage & strength, to be w<sup>th</sup> me all that turn the battle to y<sup>e</sup> gate when the Lord shall call thereto. W<sup>ch</sup> is the prayer, and that y<sup>e</sup> Lord would also giue a spirit of councell to them y<sup>t</sup> sit in Councell,—from your servant,

Robert Treat.

The army started on the morrow and spent two weeks in effectual pursuit of the enemy, returned to New London and from time to time rendered effectual service in pursuit of the Indians,

<sup>1</sup> Trumbull, 1: 353. <sup>2</sup> C. C. R., 2: 394. <sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, 401.

until in April the greater portion was disbanded, and the remainder under command of Major Talcott aided in finishing the war.<sup>1</sup> Aug. 12, King Philip was slain, and the peril successfully overcome, though with the loss to the colonies of nearly one-tenth of the fighting men, and as large a proportion of the buildings.<sup>2</sup> An instance of the clemency and magnanimity of Robert Treat is placed on record during this war, and must not be omitted from this sketch. "Daniel Clarke, jun<sup>r</sup>," say the records, "being convicted before the Council for notorious reproachful, contemptuous speeches, and threatening of Major Treat, is adjudged by the Council to pay a fine of twenty pownd and to be committed to prison there to continue dureing the Council's pleasure, and was accordingly committed. Daniel Clarke having confessed his fault, and hauing manifested some signes of repentance and the Hono<sup>rd</sup> Major Treat hauing very earnestly sollisited the Council that they would upon his request release him from imprisonment, it was accordingly granted,"<sup>3</sup> and subsequently the fine was remitted at the intercession of Mr. Treat, then Deputy Governor.<sup>4</sup>

The Major's services were now needed at home and upon his return he was elected Deputy Governor, William Leete, the Deputy Governor, having been advanced to the chair of Governor left vacant by the death of Governor Winthrop.<sup>5</sup> This post he held for the succeeding seven years, serving at the same time in various other capacities, now as judge, or committee, especially in regard to Indian affairs,<sup>6</sup> now at the request of Northampton to mediate with the Indians for the return of captives and a treaty of peace,<sup>7</sup> now as the war committee of safety, and twice being sent as commissioner for the United Colonies,<sup>8</sup> and twice chosen as substitute for those elected.

In April, 1683, Gov. William Leete died, and at the succeeding election Robert Treat was elected his successor. The troubles inaugurated by Andros were now rapidly approaching a climax. Commissioned by the Duke of York, afterward James II, as Governor of all his territory in New England, he claimed jurisdiction over not only New York and part of New Jersey, but more than half of Connecticut.<sup>9</sup> Once already he had sent an armed force to Saybrook and attempted unsuccessfully to establish his authority,<sup>10</sup> and the colonists had appealed to his Majesty and their

<sup>1</sup> C. C. R., 2: 434. <sup>2</sup> Trumbull, 1: 367-369. <sup>3</sup> C. C. R., 2: 416. *Ib.*, 483. <sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, 273. <sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, 3: 15, 52, 78, 103, 311. <sup>6</sup> Trumbull, 1: 372. <sup>7</sup> C. C. R., 3: 76, 98. <sup>8</sup> Trumbull, 1: 341, 342. <sup>9</sup> *Ib.*, 343-344.

Charter rights,<sup>11</sup> while he still continued to molest them, particularly in the matter of Fisher's Island.<sup>12</sup> In England meantime many bitter enemies of the colonies were seeking their ruin, while even the king, Charles II, was not at all favorably inclined to their mode of self government, and was particularly incensed by their opposition to the acts of trade and navigation,<sup>13</sup> and the accession of James was even more to be dreaded than the continued reign of his brother.

I am not aware that Deputy Governor Treat bore any part in the difficulty about boundary lines with Andros, and it was not till after his election as Governor that he took the chief control in the matter. Upon entering the governor's chair, he found the colony in a boundary line dispute about Rhode Island, which he quickly settled,<sup>14</sup> and then turned to New York. Here Governor Andros had been succeeded by Thomas Dongan, and was plotting mischief in England. Upon Governor Dongan's arrival in October, 1683, the governor and council wrote to him, congratulating him upon his arrival and alluding to the disputed claims in regard to that portion of Connecticut river, and receiving an answer, rather lordly but on the whole amicable.<sup>1</sup>

To this the governor replied, declaring their freedom from intention to molest the duke in any of his rightful claims, referring to the doings of some former commissioners in settling the bounds upon Mamaconick river, and declaring their intention to "maintaine a good correspondency between his Royal Highness his Government and this."<sup>2</sup> To this Governor Dongan replied, claiming at least all the lands within twenty miles of Hudson's river, if not all west of the Connecticut, and desiring the appointment of commissioners on their part for the final settlement of the line.<sup>3</sup> Governor Treat now called a special session of the General Assembly, laid the matter before them, informed them of Governor Dongan's claims and advised the appointment of commissioners as suggested.

The governor and several others were accordingly appointed by the court to go to Governor Dongan and "manifest to him this Court's grateful resentment of his Honors profession of his desire to be in amity with us, and to assure him of our good wishes" in regard to bounds. A most judicious series of instructions were

<sup>11</sup> *Ib.*, 346-347. <sup>12</sup> C. C. R., 3: 283. <sup>13</sup> Trumbull, 1: 373. <sup>14</sup> *Ib.*, 335.

<sup>1</sup> C. C. R., 3: 326-7. <sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 328, 329. <sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, 330.

prepared, probably by Governor Treat himself, advising the utmost caution and care to lose as little as possible of their territory.<sup>4</sup> They, with commissioners on the part of New York, fully settled the disputed bounds<sup>5</sup> with the loss to the colony of the town of Rye, to whom Governor Treat wrote in December, stating the necessity which had compelled them reluctantly to yield the separation, and urging them "to be satisfied and content with this change and carry it suitably to the Government under which you are now stated and apply yourselves to the Honorable Governo<sup>r</sup> who is a noble Gent<sup>n</sup> and will do what you shall desire in a regular manner to promote your welfare."<sup>6</sup>

The governor was requested by the same court that appointed the commissioners, to draw up and send a petition to the king. The colonies had been accused by evil designing persons of harboring criminals and fugitives from justice in England, and the discovery of the gunpowder plot, and several others at this time was also used to throw odium upon them.

The governor accordingly represented to the king their horror at the nefarious plots which had been discovered, their thankfulness for the escape of himself and the Duke of York, their prayers for his future welfare and safety, and their design to use all their power for the discovery of all who stirred up tumult or rebellion. At the same time he took the opportunity to recite the reasons which had induced them to leave home and friends, and the favors which had been bestowed upon them, and to pray for the continuance of this grace and favor, and the full enjoyment of the privileges they possessed.<sup>7</sup>

This same year the Duke of Hamilton made claim to a large part of the colony, and was only prevented from gaining it by a long and hard contest, both at home and in England.<sup>8</sup> But as Governor Treat bore no very active part in these transactions, I barely allude to them, and pass on to the more stirring times of the administration of Andros.

Hardly had the colonies recovered from the difficulties just related and either brought them to a successful issue or to some prospect of a settlement, and hardly had they struggled through a disastrous year of floods and famine, sickness and death,—many of their best men, particularly among the clergy, having

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, 4: 133–6. <sup>5</sup> Trumbull, 1: 384. <sup>6</sup> C. C. R., 3: 133–6. <sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, 136–8.  
<sup>8</sup> Trumbull, 1: 379–382.

been taken away,—when Charles II died, and his brother ascended the throne. Immediately upon receiving the news of his accession, the governor ordered the proclamations of his Royal Majesty, James the second, to be read, and sent an address, announcing the order, condoling with him upon the death of his brother, congratulating him upon his accession, and beseeching his “excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup> to grant the benigne shine of your favour to this your poore Colony of Connecticut,”<sup>1</sup> and shortly after, by order of the general court, and in their name, he despatched another and longer address couched in much the same terms, and taking grateful notice of his Majesty’s declaration in council of his intent to regard justice, clemency and liberty in his realm.<sup>2</sup>

Before these documents had reached him, James had sent to his “trusty and well beloved” Governor Treat a letter relating to some of his proceedings against the Earl of Argyle and the Duke of Monmouth, written in an exceedingly friendly and amicable spirit.<sup>3</sup>

But the answer to the two petitions came in the shape of a letter to the governor from Edwin Randolph, informing him that his Majesty “intends to bring all New England under one Govern<sup>t</sup>, and nothing is now remaineing on yo<sup>r</sup> part but to think of an humble submission and dutiful resignation of your charter, w<sup>ch</sup> if you are so hardie as to offer to defend at law, whilst you are contending for a shaddow, you will in the first place lose all that part of your Colonie from Conecticot to N. Yorke, and have it annexed to that gouernm<sup>t</sup>, . . . and nothing will prevent but yo<sup>r</sup> obuiating so generall a calamitie to all New England by an hartie and timely application to his Ma<sup>tie</sup> with an humble submission, wi<sup>th</sup> an annexed petition.”<sup>4</sup> At the same time he informed him that in order to carry out these threats, two writs of *Quo warranto* had been placed in his hands.<sup>5</sup> These were in effect suits against the colony “for a breach of duties upon the performance of which their Charter depended, inquiring by what authority they still continued to exercise the privileges which by that breach of duty they had forfeited, and commanding them to appear in England upon a certain day and show cause why their Charter should not be forfeited.” These Randolph declared his intention to serve unless the colony should immediately submit.

---

<sup>1</sup> C. C. R., 3: 341. <sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 179–80. <sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, 315–6. <sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, 352–4. <sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, 353.

The thing that they feared had now come upon them, and the only apparent course was to delay and procrastinate, retaining their charter as long as possible, assured that every day gained before its surrender was one day more of liberty and one day less of tyranny. With this object in view, Governor Treat despatched an evasive answer to Randolph, and immediately called a special session of the general court. At their request he drew up a petition to the king, informing him that they had heard of the threatened writs, but that they had not yet been served, and that the return day, on which they were to appear and defend themselves having passed before Randolph had reached Boston, they were consequently void and of no effect. He requested their recall, and suggested that they had been obtained through misrepresentation, declaring the loyalty of the colony to his Majesty to be unimpeached.<sup>6</sup> The suspense and anxiety of the colony were now intense. We are "waiting with sylvence and patience," said the Governor, "what may be next,"<sup>7</sup> and while they feared the possible division of Connecticut between New York and New England, and its consequent obliteration as a colony, yet the character of Andros, and his doings in Massachusetts, made the prospect of coming under his power equally to be dreaded. The governor himself did not consider it any greater calamity, if Connecticut must fall, that part should be westward. "It may be as easie for us," he said, "to fall that way as eastward."<sup>1</sup> As has been said, the return day of the writs had already passed, and more than that, they had not been legally served. This the governor insisted on in a letter to Randolph.<sup>2</sup> "But," answered Randolph, "you have acknowledged the receipt of my letter informing you of them, and that is sufficient acknowledgment of service to justify me at Whitehall."<sup>3</sup> This "way of proceeding," replied Governor Treat, "we understand not, seing it is his Majesties proclamation to continue as we were until his Royal pleasure be manifested to us, and there we stand."<sup>4</sup> At the session of the general court in July, the colony took further steps for their safety, appointing an agent, William Whiting, to represent them in England, sending a second address to the king, and appointing the governor and council a committee of safety.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, 210. <sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, 354.

<sup>1</sup> C. C. R., 3:354. <sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 210. <sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, 355. <sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, 355-6.

To Governor Dongan of New York, Governor Treat wrote in August, desiring him in view of the troubles of the colony, to give advice "what may be the best way to manage our affaires so as to obtain his Majesties favor and the continuance of o<sup>r</sup> privileges."<sup>5</sup> Governor Dongan, an accomplished courtier, was amply able to give them good advice, and had he been so disposed, might have used his influence in their behalf. But he saw the great advantage the acquisition of half of the colony would be to his own government, and sensible that unless they gave up their charter, he could not gain this, he wrote advising unconditional submission and promising that should they then desire to be annexed to New York, he would give them all his influence for favorable considerations.<sup>6</sup> Disappointed in Governor Dongan, Governor Treat now devoted his attention to the necessary instructions for the agent of the colony, and in an able and well written document, which still exists on file at Hartford, in Robert Treat's own handwriting, he gives minute and clear instructions for every emergency, especially enjoining him to procure the best of legal advice in every step he took,<sup>7</sup> and he adds to it a petition to be presented to the king, in case of the overthrow of the charter, praying for the continuance of christian liberties, free from any impositions upon conscience, the confirmation of the tenure of their estates, and free commerce with other colonies.<sup>8</sup> But before their agent reached England, a third writ had been issued against the colonies, and upon receiving it, Randolph informed the governor, adding "a door is open yet for you. . . . You have no way to make yourselves happy but by an early application to his Excellence," Edmund Andros.<sup>9</sup> "I am authorized," says Andros, in a letter written to Governor Treat at the same time "to receive the surrender of your Charter and to take you into my present care and charge."<sup>10</sup> To these the governor replied, that they relied still upon their charter which they had not forfeited by any crimes or misdemeanors, that they were the loyal subjects of the king to whom they had applied for help, but from whom as yet they had received no answer, neither had they had any opportunity of defending themselves against the writs.<sup>11</sup> His Majesty, said Andros, has given me his command for you as above, which certainly is a perfect answer to the several applications mentioned

---

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, 365. <sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, 366-7. <sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, 368-70. <sup>8</sup> *Ib.*, 374-5. <sup>9</sup> *Ib.*, 375. <sup>10</sup> *Ib.*, 375-6. <sup>11</sup> *Ib.*, 377-8.

in your letter. I give you another opportunity of suitable and dutiful resolves. I do hope better of you, and the whole colony by your good example and loyal acting in your station ere it be too late.<sup>12</sup> We cannot vary, replied the governor, from what we informed your Excellency in our former letter, and request a good neighborhood between your Excellency and the colony till his Majesty's further pleasure be made known to us.<sup>13</sup> Andros in reply declared that judgment had by this time been entered on the writ against the colony, and that he soon expected his Majesty's commands in regard to them, but he would still urge a free compliance with his wishes.<sup>1</sup> "We cannot make a surrender of o<sup>r</sup> Charter at present," answered the governor; "we are resolved thorow the help of allmighty God to prove o<sup>r</sup>selves his ma<sup>t</sup>ies loyall and dutifull subjects."<sup>2</sup>

All things now tended to the consolidation of the New England colonies under Andros, and Dongan seeing this, and that all his exertions had been fruitless, yet wished to make one more effort to gain the coveted territory. With this object in view, he wrote to the general court, charging the governor and clerk with fraud in their dealings with Andros, that for one in Connecticut that desired consolidation, a hundred favored annexation to New York, and that "Gov. Treat and Mr. Allen had writt [to England] desiring ye Colony of Connecticut might be added to Boston under Sir Edmund Andros." Allen, the clerk, he thought to be a designing rascal, but as for "yo<sup>r</sup> Gov<sup>r</sup>n<sup>r</sup>," said he, "he is an easy good natured gentleman and I believe has bin imposed upon." The court, however, paid no attention to this attempt to set them at variance with their governor.<sup>3</sup>

In October, 1687, Edmund Andros wrote to the governor that he had received orders for the annexation of Connecticut to his government with "particular regard and favor" to Mr. Treat, and that he should be at Hartford shortly to attend to his duties. On the 31st, he came and took into his hands the government, and demanded the charter.<sup>4</sup> Bulkley, in his "Will and Doom," relates the officiousness of Governor Treat in welcoming him to Hartford and waiting upon him, but if anything of the kind was true, it was doubtless all for the purpose of gaining time. The story of the day's proceedings, and of the preservation of the charter,

<sup>12</sup> *Ib.*, 379-82. <sup>13</sup> *Ib.*, 381.

<sup>1</sup> C. C. R., 3: 381. <sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 383. <sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, 386-7. <sup>4</sup> Trumbull, 1: 390.

is well known, and though resting entirely upon tradition, is deserving of confidence.

The plan was evidently a premediated one and, as his past record shows, Governor Treat was not unaware of it. The story relates that, upon taking his seat in the Governor's chair, Andros demanded the charter. After various delays and objections, as the afternoon began to wear away, the assembly at last was compelled to produce it, and the clerk bringing it in, laid it upon the table. Robert Treat then arose and rehearsed to the unwilling ears of Andros, the time and toil, the expense of treasure and life, that it had taken to build up the colony, the hardships and dangers of their Indian wars, and their conflicts with neighbor colonies; how it was because their privileges were guaranteed by the charter that they had thus spent and been spent for them; how he himself had fought and suffered to maintain those rights, and how to him and all, the charter seemed dearer than life itself, beseeching him not to deprive them of this guarantee of liberty. The afternoon wore away; the evening came, but still the governor continued, and Andros, however anxious, could not stop the dignified old gentlemen to whom he had been especially charged to show "particular regard and favor." Then the lights were lit as it grew dark, when by a sudden rush from without the lights were extinguished, and the charter quietly taken to its resting place in the famous oak. And the object of the governor's harangue was accomplished, probably in the way he expected it would be. The charter was saved.<sup>5</sup> The colony was a quiet sufferer under Andros, and Robert Treat had little to do. He was a colonel of the troops of New Haven county,<sup>6</sup> and was also on the council of fifty that Andros associated with himself for the government of the colonies,<sup>7</sup> but it was as "a father to the people, who felt for them, in their distressed circumstances,"<sup>8</sup> and to ameliorate the hardships of the nefarious schemes which Andros carried on, that he took the post. As soon as the news of the Revolution of 1688, which deposed King James, could reach the colonies, Andros was suddenly deposed. In Connecticut, with no disturbance, the charter government was resumed, and the old officers rechosen,—Robert Treat again taking the office of governor, to which the people annually reelected him for ten years, and administering it with the same prudence as before. He immediately caused

---

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, 391. <sup>6</sup> C. C. R., 3:390-2. <sup>7</sup> Trumbull, 1:391. <sup>8</sup> *Ib.*, 394.

William and Mary to be proclaimed their rightful sovereign,<sup>1</sup> and also sent a petition to them in the name of the Governor and General Court, reciting their oppressions, the tenor of their charter, their uniform adherence to it, and loyalty to the king, the writs and their illegality in the time for appearance, and want of service, the fact that judgment had never been entered against them in the English courts, and that they had never surrendered it, and praying for the decision thereto.<sup>2</sup> So ably did he state the case, that he obtained a decision in favor of the validity of their charter from various eminent persons, and finally by help of Winthrop, from the king himself,<sup>3</sup> so that the wisdom of the Governor's delay, and evasive replies to the repeated demands for the charter became apparent. Had he been bolder in resisting, probably more active measures would have given to the proceedings, at least a semblance of legality, and judgment would have been actually entered against the colony; had he surrendered the charter in hopes of gaining easier and better treatment and better terms, not only would he have failed to secure them from Andros, but King William would never have granted another charter equally liberal.

Indian wars now troubled the colony, but younger men than Governor Treat took the active part, and he only appears in one more important scene. In 1692, Benjamin Fletcher arrived at New York with a commission from the king as commander-in-chief of all the militia in New England and New York. As by their charter this power was expressly vested in the General Assembly of Connecticut, in regard to their own forces, they determined to make an earnest appeal to the king to sustain them and remove Fletcher. To this end they chose Fitz John Winthrop, son of Governor Winthrop, and a personal friend of Governor Treat, as their agent to England. In the meanwhile Fletcher finding storming and threatening of no avail with the governor, next tried to bribe him with the offer of a commission as second only to himself, but failing here he tried force. He came to Connecticut, and attempted to take command of the militia, but could not even obtain silence enough to read his commission. Winthrop, in accordance with the Governor's instructions, having observed what was most grateful and pleasant at court and cast his appli-

---

<sup>1</sup> Trumbull, 1:397. <sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 572-574. <sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, 407.

cation with prudence, gained the favorable decision before spoken of,<sup>4</sup> and returned home to announce to the people of Connecticut that their warfare was ended and henceforth their charter was to be regarded.

The great services which Winthrop had rendered the colony justly entitled him to a high reward, and at the next election the people chose him as governor.<sup>5</sup> To show that this was no slight to Mr. Treat, they gave him the post of Deputy Governor, where still his prudence and ability would avail the state and where the duties of office would be lighter. At the age of seventy-six when most would consider themselves excused from public service, he took the second time this post, and held it for ten years more, when at the age of eighty-six, he declined reëlection, and retired from public life. "Few men," says Trumbull, "have sustained a fairer character, or rendered the public more important services. He was an excellent military officer; a man of singular courage and resolution, tempered with caution and prudence. His administration of government was with wisdom, firmness and integrity. He was esteemed courageous, wise and pious. He was exceedingly beloved and venerated by the people in general, and especially by his neighbors of Milford where he resided,"<sup>1</sup> and this encomium is fully justified by the account of him just given.

Thus ended his public life. A deputy from Milford for at least six years; from Newark to the Assembly of New Jersey five more; a magistrate in the New Haven General Court, and assistant in that of Connecticut for eight years. He added to these twenty years in the halls of legislation, seventeen years in the chair of deputy governor and thirteen in that of governor, not including the two years under Andros.

His incumbency in the two offices for over thirty years has not been equalled by any other in the history of this state, nor any other, so far as I am aware, where the office was elective.

His public life at an end, he remained at Milford till his death. He had seen his children grow up around him and rise to positions of honor in this and neighboring colonies. One of his sons, Samuel, was the honored minister of Eastham, Mass.; another, John, was one of the first settlers and a leading citizen of Newark,

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, 415-417. <sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, 420.

<sup>1</sup> Trumbull, 1:455, 456, c. 18, note.

N. J., where a daughter Mary, and a sister, wives of distinguished citizens and settlers of that place resided. Two of his sons, Robert and Joseph, remained at Milford, honored by their fellow citizens, and fathers of promising families, whose descendants are well known to-day in this city of New Haven and surrounding towns. Two of his daughters married ministers, the one, Hannah, Rev. Samuel Mather of Windsor, the other, Abigail, Rev. Samuel Andrew, the minister of Milford for the last twenty-five years of the governor's life. This one was the mother of one of Governor Law's wives. Robert Treat Paine, signer of the Declaration of Independence, was the grandson of Governor Treat's son Samuel.

Goodwin gives him two children, Jane and Anna, not upon the Milford records, who are not mentioned in the will and probably, if they ever existed, died young. His first wife died in 1703. He subsequently married Mrs. Elizabeth Bryan, the widow of Richard Bryan of Milford.

He was for those times a wealthy man. Some of the various grants of land, from time to time given him by the town of Milford and the colony, have been noticed. Others he purchased, and thus became an extensive landholder. To his son Samuel he gave three hundred acres at once, and as stated in his will he had given to another of his children such as he found himself well able to part with. When in Newark, his estate was valued at £660,<sup>2</sup> and was the largest belonging to those colonists. His inventory from probate records amounts to about £620, of which £220 are real estate. This at the rate of two shillings the acre would give over 2000 acres, and some sales of land were made at that time at five acres the shilling. He seems to have been liberal with his wealth, and to have used all his powers for the benefit of his fellow citizens. Says Hollister of him: "His quick sensibilities, his playful humor, his political wisdom, his firmness in the midst of dangers, and his deep piety have still a traditionary fame in the neighborhood."<sup>3</sup>

On the 12th day of July, 1710, this great and good man died. His remains were laid to rest in the cemetery of Milford, where his tomb still stands.

---

<sup>2</sup> Stearns' Newark, 29. <sup>3</sup> Hist., 1: 371.

## INCIDENTS IN THE LIFE OF GOV. ROBERT TREAT.

## UNION OF THE COLONIES.

March 14, 1660-1, the General Court of Connecticut made a formal avowal of allegiance to the crown, and applied to Charles II for a charter. (C. C. R., 1:361, 2.) On the seventh of June the report of the committee, to whom the matter had been intrusted, was accepted, and Governor Winthrop was sent to England as the colony's agent, and sailed in August. (*Ib.*, 1:368.) April 23, 1662, a charter of a very liberal character was granted. The colonists had power to govern themselves, and were independent in all but name. (*Ib.*, 2:3-11.) Richard Treat, father of Robert Treat, as well as two brothers-in-law, were patentees. The territory embraced in the charter included the New Haven colony. Upon the reception of the charter, a commission was sent to New Haven to treat with that government. (*Ib.*, 1:388.) Nov. 4, 1662, the freeman of New Haven were convened to consult about the matter. (N. H. C. R., 2:467-8.) They had been robbed of their independence and colonial existence without their knowledge or consent. In the new charter their colony was not so much as named, nor did any of the patentees belong to New Haven. They naturally felt very indignant over what they regarded as an insult, as well as the loss of their liberties. Nothing was effected at this meeting.

March 11, 1662-3, a new commission was appointed by Connecticut to confer with New Haven about the advantages of a union. (C. C. R., 1:396.) Meanwhile the latter colony had sent an agent to England to defend their cause. On the 19th of August, the general court of Connecticut again appointed a committee to confer with New Haven, but her conduct had been so arbitrary that nothing could be done with the latter. (C. C. R., 1:407.) Jan. 7, 1663-4, the general court of New Haven drew up a remonstrance against the conduct of Connecticut, which, however, seems to have had no influence upon the policy of that colony.

In May, 1664, the freemen of New Haven met as usual and held their election. Leete was chosen Governor, and Mr. Treat one of the assistants or magistrates, but he declined the office as

he probably foresaw that the downfall of the colony was at hand. (N. H. C. R., 2: 542.) The New England congress met at Hartford Sept. 1, 1664, and though not approving of the course of Connecticut, urged a speedy and friendly union of the two colonies, which was effected Dec. 13, 1664. (*Ib.*, 2: 551-559.) The New Haven colony was too weak, and becoming weaker every day, to continue the struggle longer, while the existence of both was threatened by the patent granted to the Duke of York, March 12, 1664.

The union proved a beneficial move for both parties. Mr. Treat exerted himself strenuously, and effectually at last, to bring about this result. The fact that his father and other relatives were patentees may have influenced his conduct to some extent. His course must have made him enemies, for when nominated as assistant from Milford in 1666, at the next election after the union he was not chosen, though it is more than probable that he declined to be a candidate, as he was about to remove to New Jersey, and therefore could not have served had he been elected.

#### SETTLEMENT OF NEWARK, NEW JERSEY.

The union of the Connecticut and New Haven colonies was very offensive to many of the latter, and was the principal cause of the founding of a new colony in New Jersey. Though some of the emigrants favored the union on general grounds, as did Robert Treat, yet they were opposed to it for many reasons, especially as it was brought about without any knowledge and consent on their part, and they had fears, which proved to be utterly groundless, that they might lose some of their civil and religious liberties. As early as 1661, attempts were made to induce discontented Puritans and other Englishmen to settle in the New Netherlands. The "Concessions" put forth by the proprietors, inviting new settlers, and giving a most glowing account of the wonderful fertility and resources of the country, besides guaranteeing the largest liberty of conscience in religious matters, caused attention to be directed to a settlement in a new land. (N. J. Archives, 1: 28-43.) Nov. 8, 1661, Benjamin Fenn, Mr. Robert Treat, Mr. Lawes, and Deacon Gun were sent as delegates to negotiate with the Dutch Governor Stuyvesant for a settlement at Achter Cull in New Jersey. They were hospitably entertained by the

Governor at his house, and taken in his barge to examine Newark Bay, where they made extensive explorations. But circumstances prevented any settlement at this time, though a correspondence was kept up as late as July 20, 1663. (N. Y. Col. Hist., 13: 210, 218, 221, 222, 266, 267, 281, 282.)

The union of the colonies in 1664 again directed attention to New Jersey. During this year a few residents at the west end of Long Island, who had originally come from Connecticut, effected a settlement in that colony.

Very early in 1666, and perhaps still earlier, Robert Treat and others were appointed commissioners to select a site for a settlement on the Passaic river, and before the end of May of that year, thirty families from the towns of Guilford, Brandford, Milford and New Haven, Conn., emigrated to New Jersey. It was supposed that Governor Carteret had cleared the land of all Indian claims, but it seems, he was not authorized to do this, and consequently the emigrants were warned off by the Hackensack Indians, and obliged to reload their goods into their vessels, till an agreement could be made.

Oct. 30, 1666, the emigrants from Brandford adopted this agreement:

“1st. That none shall be admitted freemen or free Burgesses within our Town, upon Passaic River, in the province of New Jersey, but such planters as are members of some or other of the Congregational churches; nor shall any but such be chosen to Magistracy, or to carry on any part of Civil Judicature, or as Deputies or Assistants to have power to Vote in establishing Laws, and making or Repealing them, or to any Chief Military Trust or office. Nor shall any But such church members have any Vote in such election: Tho’ all others admitted to Be planters have Rights to their proper Inheritances, and do and shall enjoy all other Civil Liberties and Privileges, According to Laws, Orders, Grants, which are, or hereafter shall Be Made for this Town.

“2d. We shall with Care and Diligence provide for the maintenance of the purity of Religion professed in the Congregational Churches.” (Stearns’ Newark, pp. 14–15.)

These articles were signed by twenty-three heads of families, among whom was Jasper Crane. On June 24, 1667, the other inhabitants of Newark, to the number of forty, signed the same

agreement. The name of Robert Treat heads the list. Among the number were Obadiah Bruen, Matthew Campfield, and Azariah Crane. (*Ib.*, p. 15.) July 11, 1667, a tract of land was purchased of the Indians, and the settlement commenced in earnest. The first town meeting, of which there is any record, was held May 21, 1666. The name of the settlement was at first called Milford, but was soon changed to Newark, in honor, as supposed, of its first minister, who preached awhile in Newark, England.

Mr. Treat was the first town clerk, or recorder, of Newark, holding the office from 1669 to 1672. At the first Provincial Assembly ever held in New Jersey, May 26, 1668, Capt. Robert Treat was one of the burgesses or deputies, and held that office till 1672. May 1, 1671, he was present at a special court held at Elizabethtown, as one of the Governor's commissioners.

Upon the division of the lands, Mr. Treat had the choice of a home lot of eight acres, two more than allowed to others. He selected the lot now bounded by Market, Mulberry, and Broad streets, where some of his descendants resided up to the commencement of the present century. On this home lot now stands the First Presbyterian church. His son John, daughter Mary, who married Deacon Crane, and sister Sarah, who married Matthew Campfield, resided in Newark.

The proceedings at the adjustment of the boundary between Newark and Elizabethtown, exhibits well the peace-loving character of Mr. Treat. In this controversy, Jasper Crane, Robert Treat, Matthew Campfield, Samuel Swaine and Thomas Johnson were appointed to represent Newark, and John Ogden and four others attended on the part of Elizabethtown. The parties met on a little hill, afterward called Divident Hill, and subsequently Dividend Hill. Mr. Treat led in prayer "that there might be a good agreement between them." Then John Ogden prayed and gave thanks for their "loving agreement." It was agreed that the boundary should be on this hill. But long afterwards this boundary settled in "so loving and solemn a manner" was made a subject of altercation. (See Coll. N. J. Hist. Soc. Vol. vi, and Supplement; Stearns' Hist. Disc. relating to the First Presb. Church in Newark.)

In the documents relating to the settlement of Newark, Robert Treat and only a few others had the title of "Mr." In 1672, he

returned to Milford, and in 1675, was dismissed from the church in Newark to the church in that town.

“To the good judgment of these individuals,” say Barber and Howe, in their Historical Collections of the state of New Jersey, p. 173, “who were Robert Treat, John Curtis, Jasper Crane, and John Treat, we are indebted for the plan of our town—our wide main streets (the only ones then laid out), and the beauty and extent of our public squares.”

The Rev. Mr. Stearns, in his Hist. Disc., p. 32, thus speaks of Mr. Treat:

“Next comes Robert Treat—the flower and pride of the whole company—who came to the colony of New Haven when a young man, and was early advanced to posts of influence and trust. To his wise energy Newark owes much of its early order and good management.”

#### MILITARY RECORD.

In 1654, the town of Milford chose Robert Treat lieutenant of the Train Band. May 31, 1654, the general court confirmed the nomination and allowed him to be “the chiefe military officer there for the present to order y<sup>e</sup> millitary affairs of that town.” (N. H. C. R., 2:99.)

In 1661, he was elected captain, and the choice was confirmed by the court, May 29th. (*Ib.*, 2:410.)

July 6, 1665, the court declared that Mr. Treat was “established Captain of the Traine Band at Milford.” (C. C. R., 2:21.)

Aug. 7, 1673, Captain Treat was commissioned as major. (*Ib.*, 2:206.)

Nov. 26, 1673, Major Treat was nominated and appointed the second commander-in-chief of such forces as shall be raised in the colony and sent against New York. (*Ib.*, 2:218.)

The origin of King Philip’s war was owing to the gradual encroachments of the English, the increasing areas of settled land, which caused a scarcity of game and fish, and the ill treatment which the Indians frequently received at the hands of the whites. They plainly saw that their only hope was in driving out and exterminating the invader. To bring about this state of affairs, Philip sent agents far and wide among the neighboring tribes to invite them to take united action against the English. In most cases he was successful.

Aug. 25, 1675, the council chose Major Treat commander-in-chief of the forces next to be sent against the Indians, and on the 30th he received his instructions. (*Ib.*, 2:356-7.) He was ordered to march first to Westfield, Mass., then to Northampton, and further if necessary. He was also to advise and consult with the "Bay Commanders." Sept. 1, at a meeting of the council, he was ordered to return with his troops to Hartford owing to reports of Indian outrages at home. (*Ib.*, 2:359.) Next day the council reconsidered their action, and Major Treat was ordered to proceed according to his original instructions. (*Ib.*, 2:360.)

Sept. 2, the Indians surprised the people and garrison of Northfield, Mass., while at work in the fields, killed some, burned many houses, and destroyed the crops.

The next day Capt. Richard Beers, ignorant of the assault, set out from Hadley, thirty miles distant, with thirty-six mounted men and an ox team to remove the garrison and people from Northfield to Hadley. That night he encamped within four miles of the town. Next morning he started for the place, still ignorant of the situation. While on his way, he was attacked by the Indians, and all but thirteen of his men were slain.

Sept. 5, Major Treat marched from Hadley with 100 men for Northfield. On the morning of the sixth, he came upon the battle-field with the dead still unburied. Delaying only long enough to bury them, he hurried on to the town, where he found the garrison safe. On the same evening he set out on his return for Hadley with the people, receiving a slight wound in the thigh from straggling Indians.

Sept. 9, Major Treat was present at a meeting of the council at Hartford, having returned from the front. (C. C. R., 2:364.) On the 11th of Sept. he was present at another meeting and ordered to march with dragoons for Hadley or Northampton to consult with Major Pynchon and others in regard to prosecuting the war against the Indians and to take charge of all troops doing garrison duty. (*Ib.*, 2:365.)

Sept. 18, Captain Lathrop with eighty-five men, was employed in conveying stores from Deerfield to Hadley. After proceeding about five miles they fell into an ambushade of about 700 Indians, and seventy-six of his men were slaughtered. This conflict took place at Muddy Brook, which afterwards received the name of Bloody Brook. Captain Mosely came upon the scene and after-

wards Major Treat with one hundred soldiers, and seventy friendly Mohegan Indians, thereby turning a disastrous defeat into a victory.

After the destruction of Northfield and Deerfield, Philip decided also to burn Springfield. Oct. 4, a large number of Indians were reported to be near Hadley. Therefore the soldiers were withdrawn from the former place to the latter. That very night a friendly Indian reported that the Springfield Indians, who were supposed to be friendly, intended to destroy that town. The next day Major Pynchon and a force started for Springfield, but arrived to find the town already in flames and the enemy gone. Major Treat had arrived some hours earlier on the west side of the river, from Westfield, but was unable to cross, there being no boats. Three men and one woman were killed, and thirty houses and twenty-five barns were burnt.

Oct. 12, Captain Appleton of the Massachusetts troops complains of the long absence of Major Treat at Hartford. He speaks of him very highly as "a worthy Gentleman and discrete and encouraging Commander." The Connecticut troops were often called away from the Massachusetts towns to defend their own territory from threatened attacks. This must have caused much trouble and annoyance to the Massachusetts commanders, but their action was unavoidable.

On the 14th of October, Major Treat appeared before the assembly and desired to throw up the commission which he had received on the 25th of August last. Perhaps his action was owing to the complaints made above. But they refused to grant his request, and declared that "they have taken so good satisfaction in the major's good conduct that they doe desire and order major Rob<sup>t</sup> Treat to continue his regiment over the forces of the Colony rayised for the prosecution of the enemy and doe order the continuance of his commission granted as before by the Councill." (*Ib.*, 2:266.) He was also ordered to send immediately forty men under some suitable commander to the assistance of Norwich, then threatened by the Indians. (*Ib.*, 2:265.) These orders were soon countermanded, and he was sent to the relief of Northampton. While there Philip, with 800 warriors attacked Hadley on the 19th of October. The garrison made a stubborn resistance till the arrival of Major Treat with his troops, who fell upon the savages with such vigor that they soon fled. The Indians were now so disheartened with their losses that many of them abandoned Philip.

The eastern townships of Connecticut were now so threatened by the enemy that they made strenuous efforts to protect themselves. Every county was ordered to raise and equip sixty dragoons. A company of 120 dragoons was placed under Major Treat. Nov. 19, he and the Connecticut troops were dismissed at Westfield and allowed to march home.

A winter campaign was next decided upon as being the only season when a serious blow could be inflicted upon the Indians. If left alone, when summer came, they could easily take care of themselves, and sally forth suddenly from their lurking places in the forests upon unprotected settlements, while it would be very difficult or impossible to discover and punish them. War was declared against the Narragansetts on the second of Nov., 1675. One thousand men were raised to attack them in their principal fort, situated in what is now the town of South Kingston, Rhode Island. Massachusetts furnished 527 soldiers under Maj. Samuel Appleton; the Plymouth quota under Maj. Wm. Bradford and Capt. John Gorham numbered 158; Connecticut sent 300 men besides 150 Mohegan and Pequot Indians under Major Treat, in five companies, whose captains were Seeley, Gallop, Mason, Watts and Marshall. The whole expedition was placed under Gov. Josiah Winslow of the Plymouth Colony. The fort to be attacked was built on a hill in the centre of a vast swamp, making an island of about five or six acres, surrounded by high palisades, strengthened by fallen trees. The only entrance was by a large log about five feet from the ground which formed a bridge across the water surrounding the fort, and this was guarded by a block house. The second of December was observed as a day of fasting and prayer for the success of the expedition. Dec. 10, Major Treat set out from New London with his force, and on the 17th arrived at Pettisquanscot. As the enemy had just burnt the buildings, he was obliged to pass the night in the open air. On the 18th all the forces united, camping in the open field, in the midst of a very severe snow storm. The next day, being Sunday, they started before daybreak for the fort, some fifteen miles distant, the Massachusetts troops leading the van, while the Connecticut forces drew up in the rear. It was about one o'clock at noon, when the fort was reached. The soldiers were hungry and weary with their march through the deep snow. But no time was to be lost, for should night overtake them as they were, they would be at the

mercy of the foe. Without any delay the men began to cross the tree in single file exposed to a raking fire from the enemy. As fast as one fell another took his place. The loss was very severe here. What would have been the result can only be conjectured, had not Captain Mosely at this critical moment forced an entrance over the hedge in the rear and opened a hot fire. The Indians taken by surprise now fled to their wigwams, some 600 in number, but they were followed up by their assailants, who set fire to them, and they were consumed with their contents, including their stores, many old men and women, as well as the wounded. About 300 Indians were slain, and many wounded crawled off into the swamp where they perished with cold and wet. The prisoners numbered 350, besides an equal number of women and children were taken, making the total loss to the Indians not far from 1000. The colonists lost severely, having seven captains and 172 men killed and wounded. Connecticut lost three of her five captains and a fourth, Captain Mason, was mortally wounded, and seventy-one of her soldiers were killed or wounded. Major Treat had a bullet through the rim of his hat, and is said to have been the last man to leave the fort being in command of the rear guard. There being no shelter now that the wigwams were burnt, the weary soldiers, who had already marched fifteen miles that morning, besides fighting for three hours, started back about sunset, with the dead and wounded, for their headquarters, which they reached in a terrible condition. Major Treat now ordered his troops home to recruit. (See the Hist. and Geneal. Reg., Vol. XL, 74-90, for an account of this fight, and a view of the battle ground as it now appears.)

Jan. 10, 1675-6, the council issued a very strict order to prevent "profaneness," and to insure order among the soldiers, which was to be published to the army under Major Treat. (C. C. R., 2: 392-4.)

Jan. 25, 1675-6, Major Treat, in connection with the Massachusetts troops, left New London on a second expedition to the woods, with 300 white men, and pursued the enemy into the Nipmuck country. He returned to New London on the fifth of February.

March 25, 1676, Major Treat was dispatched by the council to Norwich, with 100 men. (C. C. R., 2: 422.)

At the next election, May 11, 1676, Major Treat was chosen deputy governor, and Maj. John Talcott was appointed to command the Connecticut forces. (*Ib.*, 2:279.)

Nov. 7, 1687, Major Treat was commissioned as colonel of the militia of New Haven Co., by Governor Andros. (*Ib.*, 3:391.)

Oct. 28, 1693, Col. Benj. Fletcher, captain-general and governor-in-chief of New York, tendered a commission to Col. Robert Treat as commander of all the militia in the colony of Connecticut, but the colony refused to acknowledge that Fletcher had any jurisdiction over them. (*Ib.*, 4:116.)

#### THE BOUNDARY CONTROVERSY BETWEEN CONNECTICUT AND NEW YORK.

In 1683, a dispute arose between the colonies of Connecticut and New York in regard to the boundary line. It was claimed on the part of New York, that by some mistake the line between the two colonies had been run by the commissioners only ten instead of twenty miles east of the Hudson river, and that the towns of Rye, Greenwich and Stamford really belonged to its jurisdiction and not to Connecticut. (*Ib.*, 3:330.) Nov. 5, 1683, Governor Dongan, of New York, wrote Governor Treat that unless the boundary line was changed to what was originally intended, he should lay claim to all territory west of the Connecticut river, as far as the Duke's Patent allowed. (*Ib.*, 3:329-30.)

The general court, Nov. 14, 1683, authorized Gov. Robert Treat, Maj. Nathan Gold, Capt. John Allyn, Esq., and William Pitkin to proceed to New York to confer with Governor Dongan about the boundary. (*Ib.*, 3:134-5.) They were instructed not to "exceed his demand of twenty-miles eastward from Hudson's river, but get him to take as little as may be," etc. (*Ib.*)

The committee accordingly visited New York and had an interview with the Governor. The matter was settled by a compromise, and the agreement ratified Feb. 23, 1683-4. The line was drawn where it now is between Rye and Greenwich. They were obliged to cede Rye to the jurisdiction of New York, but wrote a very kind letter Nov. 28, to the selectmen of that town, informing them of the fact and giving them the reasons for their action. (*Ib.*, 3:330-3.) Greenwich and Stamford remained in Con-

necticut. In 1697, the town of Rye revolted to Connecticut, but the matter was referred to the King, and March 28, 1700, the agreement of 1683 was confirmed. The shape of the boundary is a very irregular one, as can be seen by reference to a map. It is said to be very doubtful whether the boundary between Connecticut and New York is really settled to this day.

#### USURPATION OF ANDROS.

James II came to the throne Feb. 6, 1684–5. He determined to withdraw the charters previously granted to the colonies, and place them under a governor appointed by the crown.

Accordingly a writ of *Quo Warranto*, dated July 8, 1685, was issued, twenty-three years after the granting of the charter, requiring the governor and company of the English colony in Connecticut to appear in England by Nov. 8, 1685, and show by what warrant or authority they claimed certain privileges in the colony. A second *Quo Warranto*, requiring the parties to appear by April 19, 1686, was received at the same time, on the 20th of July, 1686, at about twelve or one o'clock in the morning. The time when these writs were returnable had long since expired. (*Ib.*, 3: 356–8.)

July 28, 1686, a special session of the court was held. Mr. Whiting was appointed an agent to proceed to England and plead the cause of colony before the king. His instructions are dated Aug. 24, and are in the handwriting of Governor Treat. He was instructed to present the humble address of the colony, using great wisdom and prudence in order to produce a favorable effect. And since the two writs of *Quo Warranto* had not been delivered till after the lapse of more than a year from the time when they were issued, he was to ascertain whether the parties were obliged to appear till after new writs should be issued. A copy of the charter was to be exhibited if necessary. The instructions say further:

“In case nothing will doe, but notwithstanding our addresses and all pleas made in our behalf, our Charter should be condemned as forfeit, you are to consider and advise whether by petition or some other way, a suspension of entering judgement may not, by his Majestie’s favour, or favour of his Judges, be obtained, untill we may have notice thereof and opportunity given us either to speak for ourselves or make our further Address to his Majestie.”

If he was unsuccessful in obtaining a suspension, he was to ascertain whether Connecticut was likely to be assigned to the Bay or Massachusetts colony, or to New York; or whether it was to be divided between these two colonies, the river being the dividing line. He was to do the best he could that the colony might remain intact and under such government as it should please his Majesty to appoint. (C. C. R., 3:211-3, 368-73.)

A draft of an address to the king, in case of a judgment against the charter, is written on the same sheet with Mr. Whiting's instructions. (*Ib.*, 3:374-5.)

Aug. 5, Governor Treat wrote to Governor Dongan of New York in regard to the writs of *Quo Warranto*, asking his advice as to "the best way to manage our affaires, so as to obtain his Majesties favour and the continuance of o<sup>r</sup> privileges to us as formerly." (*Ib.*, 3:365-6.)

Aug. 13, Governor Dongan replied, advising "a downright humble submission, the most effectual means to secure w<sup>t</sup> is most advantageous, liberty, prosperity, and what is of all things the most tender and dearest, Religion." (*Ib.*, 3:366-7.)

He also advised that Connecticut be annexed to New York, believing, as did Andros, that this union was necessary to the welfare of New York. Massachusetts was at the same time very desirous that Connecticut should be annexed to her. The fertile intervalles of the Connecticut were the sources from which large supplies of grain were obtained.

Dec. 20, Sir Edmund Andros arrived in Boston. On the 22d, he directed a letter to Governor Treat, informing him that he had been appointed Governor of New England, and that he was authorized to receive the "surrender of your charter (if tendered by you)." This letter was received by Governor Treat, Dec. 28, 1686, at eleven o'clock at night, together with a third *Quo Warranto*, dated Oct. 23, 1686, and returnable by Feb. 9, 1686-7. The expense of the messenger from Boston was £4. 15s. 0d. (*Ib.*, 3:376-7.)

Dec. 23, Edward Randolph also wrote a sharp letter to Governor Treat from Boston, advising him to submit, and thereby merit the favors of the king, and informing him that New Plymouth and Rhode Island had already yielded. (*Ib.*, 3:375.)

Jan. 26, 1686-7, there was a special meeting of the assembly to decide what was best to be done. The whole matter was left to

the discretion of the governor and council. (*Ib.*, 3:226.) Thereupon an address was drawn up, dated Jan. 26, 1686-7, and directed to the Earl of Sunderland, Secretary of State, complaining that no notice had been taken of the previous addresses, and apologizing for not observing the writs of *Quo Warranto*, by reason of the distance, and the rigor of the winter, and at the same time stating that in case his Majesty should see fit to unite them with another colony, they preferred to be placed under Governor Andros. (*Ib.*, 3:377-8.)

Feb. 25, Andros sent another letter to Governor Treat and council, complaining of their delay in surrendering the charter, though expressing loyalty to the king. Feb. 28, he addressed a similar letter to Governor Treat. (C. C. R., 3:379.)

March 30, 1687, the governor and council inform Andros in a letter that they "cannot vary from what we informed your excellency in our letters of Jan. 26." The following passage was crossed out in the original draft, "and then when we are commanded by his Ma<sup>tie</sup> to surrender o<sup>r</sup>selves to your excellency's government, and to be united w<sup>th</sup> o<sup>r</sup> neighbo<sup>rs</sup> in y<sup>r</sup> government, we shall be as loyall and dutiful as any, we hope, and as readily submit o<sup>r</sup>selves to your excellency." (*Ib.*, 3:380-1.)

June 13, Andros advises Governor Treat and council to delay no longer, till an execution be served upon them. (*Ib.*, 3:381-2.)

June 18, the governor and council sent a letter to Andros, saying that they were resolved to continue as they were for the present till his Majesty's pleasure for a change was made known to them, and therefore they could not "make a surrender of our Charter at present." (*Ib.*, 3:383.)

Oct. 4, Governor Dongan in a letter to the court, expresses great surprise that Connecticut should desire to be annexed to Boston instead of New York. "As for your Gov<sup>rn<sup>r</sup></sup>," he remarks, "he is an easy good natured gentleman and I believe has bin imposed uppon." He could not forgive Governor Treat and Secretary Allyn for preferring Massachusetts to New York. In a letter to the Earl of Sunderland, Feb., 1688, Governor Dongan complains that this had been done "by ye fraud of ye Governo<sup>r</sup> and ye Clerk unknowne to ye rest of the General Court." (*Ib.*, 386-7.)

Oct. 22, Andros informed Governor Treat in a letter, that the king had annexed Connecticut to Massachusetts, and that he

should be at Hartford about the end of next week, or should send some one in his place. (*Ib.*, 3: 387-8.)

Thereupon Governor Treat summoned the general court to meet at Hartford at that time. (*Ib.*, 3: 248.) Monday, Oct. 31, 1687, Governor Andros, attended by many members of his council, and a body guard of "regular troops," entered Hartford, where he was hospitably received with great ceremony. The court was in session, and Governor Andros entered the assembly leaning on the arm of Governor Treat. He explained the reason for placing all the colonies under a single head. According to tradition, Governor Treat remonstrated against the surrender of the charter, and such arbitrary proceedings as had just taken place, but to no avail. The conference was protracted till after dark; lighted candles were brought in, and the charter was laid upon the table in the midst of the assembly. Suddenly the candles were extinguished, and quickly re-lighted. But meanwhile the charter had quietly disappeared. There was no noise or confusion. The room was carefully searched, yet no trace of the missing document could be found. It had been carried from the assembly by Captain Wadsworth, and hidden in the hollow trunk of a venerable oak, afterwards called the Charter oak. The tree was blown down Aug. 21, 1856. It was computed to be 1000 years old, and was thirty-three feet in circumference seven feet above the ground, where it broke off. It stood on what is now Lot number 29, Charter Oak avenue, in the city of Hartford. A marble stone marks the place where it once stood. The charter was concealed somewhere from Oct. 31, 1687 to May 9, 1689. (See Memorial History of Hartford Co., pp. 63-73, vol. 2.)

It is commonly supposed that Andros did not obtain the charter. But this is a mistake, I think. He doubtless did obtain it or a copy of it, or could have done so if he had been so disposed. There is no record that he ever demanded it of the assembly. He was simply a usurper, and did not make way with the charter, for this he could not do legally, for the colonies had not forfeited it, but he overrode it. He had gained possession of the government, as he desired, and was loyally received by the people, according to all accounts, who very wisely made the best of the situation, and cheerfully acquiesced in what they were utterly powerless to prevent. The wisdom of their course was afterwards apparent. Nor is there any mention whatever in the

records or by contemporary writers, of the hiding of the charter from Andros. This act of disloyalty would certainly have been mentioned had it occurred, and would have caused great trouble. The proceedings of the very next morning prove that Andros knew nothing of this transaction. Jeremiah Dummer, in his "Defence of the New-England Charters," says: "At the same time [1687] Sir Edmund Andros, then the King's governor of New-England, did by order from court repair to Hartford, the capital of Connecticut, with arm'd attendants, and forcibly seized their charter for the king. Rhode Island finding there was no remedy to be had, made a virtue of necessity, and peacefully resign'd theirs." (Page 7, Lond. Ed., 1766.)

This account was first published in 1721, only thirty-four years after the event, and is proof that Andros gained his point, whatever that was. As to this difficult matter we know this for certainty that the colony had no trouble with Andros, and that if he did receive the charter, he restored it again, for it is in existence at this day.

#### COLONIAL RECORDS.

From the colonial records we learn this much in regard to the charter. At the session of June 15, 1687, in accordance with the desire of sundry persons, the charter was sent for and exhibited by the secretary, and then "the Governor bid him put it into the box again and lay it on the table and leave the key in the box, which he did forthwith." And there the record leaves it on the table. (C. C. R., 3:238.)

But at the same time the story of the hiding of *a* charter may be strictly true. It was first published by Trumbull in his History of Connecticut, in 1797, and it is supposed that he received his information from George Wyllys, Secretary of the colony and state from 1735 to 1796, who assisted him in his History, and who was the grandson of Samuel Wyllys, upon whose estate the charter oak stood.

I am indebted to the notes of Mr. Hoadley upon the Connecticut Colonial Records for the earlier versions of the story of the concealment of the charters. Roger Wolcott wrote for President Clap a Memoir relating to Connecticut, dated July 12, 1759, seventy-two years after the usurpation of Andros. The original was some years since in the possession of George Brinley of Hartford. He says: "In Oct., 1687, Sir Edmund Andross came

to Hartford. The Assembly met and sat late at night. They ordered the Charters to be set on the table, and unhappily, or happily, all the candles were snuffed out at once, and when they were lighted, the Charters were gone. And now Sir Edmund being in town and the Charters gone, the Secretary closed the Colony records with the word *Finis*, and all departed."

In 1764, Roger Wolcott gave President Stiles this story, as the latter records it in his *Itinerary*, II, 105, now in Yale College Library, "Nath. Stanly, father of late Col. Stanly took one of the Connecticut Charters, and Mr. Talcott, late Gov. Talcott's father, took the other, from Sir Edmund Andross in Hartford meeting house,—the lights blown out." (Vol. 5: 507.)

It will be seen that these stories vary widely from that told by Trumbull.

The following order throws some light on the subject. At a meeting of the governor and council, May 25, 1698, "the duplicate of the Pattent by order from the Govern<sup>r</sup> and Council being brought by Capt<sup>n</sup> Joseph Wadsworth, and he affirming that he had order from the Gen<sup>rel</sup> Assembly to be the keeper of it, the Govern<sup>r</sup> and Councill concluded that it should remain in his custodie till the Generall assembly or the Councill shall see cause to order otherwise and the s<sup>d</sup> duplicate was delivered to him by order of the Councill." (C.C.R., 4:263.)

In May, 1715, the general court passed this resolve:

"Upon consideration of the faithful and good service of Capt. Joseph Wadsworth, of Hartford, especially in securing the Duplicate Charter of this Colony in a very troublesome season when our Constitution was struck at, and in safely keeping and preserving the same ever since to this day. This Assembly do as a token of their greatful resentment of such his faithful and good service grant him out of the Colony treasury the sum of twenty shillings." (*Ib.*, 5: 507.)

This bill originated in the Lower House and as passed there gave Captain Wadsworth four pounds. The Upper House negatived it and twenty shillings were agreed upon as a compromise. From this testimony it is evident that it was not the *original* charter, but the *duplicate* one, or copy, that Captain Wadsworth had charge of. Nor did the assembly seemingly regard his services of any very great value, as he was awarded only twenty shillings or one pound.

It may seem very strange that we should know nothing for certainty in regard to such an important matter as the charter, but neither have the names of the actors who threw overboard the tea in Boston harbor in 1773, ever been known except in a few cases by tradition, and it is now, and was soon after the event, a question as to who commanded at Bunker Hill, Prescott or Putnam.

The original charter, engrossed on three skins, now hangs in the secretary's office at Hartford. The duplicate, that preserved by Captain Wadsworth, was on two skins, and about three-fourths of it, all that now remains, is at the present time in possession of the Connecticut Historical Society, to which it was presented by Hon. John Boyd, who accidentally became possessed of it. In Oct., 1760, the general court ordered the charter to be printed. (*Ib.*, 4:332.)

Tuesday morning, Nov. 1, 1687, Mr. Treat and Capt. John Allyn, late secretary of the colony, were made members of Andros' council, and took their oaths. They were also made Judges of the Pleas in their respective counties. (*Ib.*, 3:390.) November 7, Major Treat was commissioned by Andros as colonel of the militia in New Haven Co., and other officers were appointed throughout the colony. (*Ib.*, 3:391-2.)

The wonderful statesmanship of Governor Treat is best illustrated by his shrewd management during the proceedings in regard to the forfeiture of the charter. In his mind the loss of the liberties of the colony seems to have been a foregone conclusion from the very beginning, and he determined to make the best of the situation, and delay the calamity as long as possible. This is plain from the "Instructions" which he drew up for Mr. Whiting, the colony's agent, whose duty was first, to prevent if possible, the loss of the colony's charter; secondly, failing in this, to plead that the colony might not be divided and united to others, but allowed to remain intact. Subsequently the hope was expressed that if Connecticut was to be united with some other colony, she might be annexed to Massachusetts, rather than to New York. Many corporations in England had already lost their charters; Massachusetts and Rhode Island surrendered theirs, and how could it be expected that Connecticut would be allowed to retain hers, which was so liberal that the colony was almost a free state in all but name? No attention was paid to the writs

of *Quo Warranto*, except by addresses to the king, and apologies for not observing them by reason of stress of weather, or the great distance, and yet the colony did not suffer from this disobedience. When Governor Andros demanded the surrender of the charter, the governor and council replied that they could not comply with the request till they had heard from the king. And finally Andros was obliged to come to Hartford in person to take charge of the government. Yet the very next day Governor Treat and Secretary Allyn were appointed members of his council, and within a week the former was commissioned a colonel. It was doubtless owing to the influence of these men that Connecticut suffered less from the tyrannical acts of Andros than the other colonies.

The conduct of Andros in the colonies was generally very tyrannical, and was a great blow to their prosperity. Nov. 5, 1688, William, Prince of Orange, landed in England. As soon as the news reached Boston, on the 18th of April, 1689, the people rose in rebellion, seized Andros and put him in confinement. The following February he was released and sent to England for trial.

May 9, 1689, Governor Treat and the old magistrates under the charter, resumed the offices from which they had been deposed by Andros in 1687. (C. C. R., 3:250-1.) The following characteristic remark of Governor Treat has been preserved. At a trial before the court of assistants in October, 1690, the defendant pleaded to the jurisdiction and challenged the authority of the court, and the existing government under which it was constituted. To this the governor replied "that the People had put him in, and he had ventured all he had above his shouldiers on this account,—and therefore he would maintain it." (*Ib.*, 3:460.)

#### DEATH OF GOV. ROBERT TREAT.

On the 12th of July, 1710, Robert Treat died at the ripe old age of eighty-six or eighty-eight years, as stated on his gravestone. His had been a very active life. We first become acquainted with him in 1639, in Milford, when a youth of about sixteen, he assisted the settlers in laying out their lots. From that time till within a few years of his death he was most actively engaged in the affairs of State as well as attending

successfully to his own. The numerous high positions to which he was elected, as well as the various services of a more humble and private nature which he rendered during his long life, show plainly in what estimation he was held by his fellow citizens. He was called "Mr."—which was no meaningless title in those days,—in both Connecticut and New Jersey. As late as 1706, out of the 109 Proprietors of New Milford, only six besides Robert Treat had that title prefixed to their names. He was early recognized by the authorities as no ordinary man. In 1656, Lieutenant Treat was called upon by the town of Milford to watch as other men against the threatened inroads of Indians. But they were reprimanded by the General Court, May 28, 1656, which declared "that he ought to be free for his person, estate, and one house lot." (N. H. C. R. 2:177).

In May, 1710, the General Court passed this resolution:

"This assembly remembering the great and good services done for this Colony by the antient and honorable Coll. Robert Treat, late Governor, do give and grant unto him out of the public treasury of the Colony, the sum of twenty pounds, as money to be paid to him by the treasurer." (C. C. R. 5:153, 4.)

The testimony of the historian Trumbull has been given on page 172. Hollister, in his History of Connecticut, remarks:

"Governor Treat was not only a man of high courage, but he was one of the most cautious military leaders and possessed a quick sagacity united with a breadth of understanding that enabled him to see at a glance the most complex relations that surrounded the field of battle. Nor did he excell only as a hero; his moral courage and inherent force of character shone with the brightest lustre in the executive chair or legislative chamber, when stimulated by the opposition and malevolence of such men as Andros. In private life he was no less esteemed. He was a planter of that hospitable order that adorned New England in an age when hospitality was accounted a virtue, and when the term gentleman was something more than an empty title. His house was always open to the poor and friendless, and whenever he gave his hand, he gave his heart. Hence, whether marching to the relief of Springfield, or extending his charities to Whalley or Goffe, while he drowned a tear of sympathy in the lively sparkle of fun and of anecdote, he was always welcome, always beloved. His quick sensibilities, his playful humor, his political

wisdom, his firmness in the midst of dangers, and his deep piety, have still a traditionary fame in the neighborhood where he spent the brief portion of his time that he was allowed to devote to the culture of the domestic and social virtues." (Chap. 17, p. 371, Vol. 1.)

The seal of Robert Treat may be seen in Lambert's History of the Colony of New Haven, page 138.

There are several letters from him of the date of 1684 and 1697, to the authorities in Massachusetts, preserved in the Mass. Archives, 2:253, 255. Copies of the autographs have been made.

COPY OF ROBERT TREAT'S WILL:

"I the said Robert Treat being aged in years and not knowing how suddenly the Lord may by death call me home from out of this life, but being at present of sound understanding and memory, do make this my last will and testament as followeth, hereby making null and void all former wills whatsoever made by me.

Imprimis.

I commit my soul to God through the alone merits of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, and my body to a decent burial as my executors shall see meet. And as for my worldly goods which God of his bounty has bestowed upon me being not already disposed of by me, having already given to all my children such portions of my estate as I found myself then well able to part with & hopefully to their content.

As for ye rest of my estate undisposed of hitherto, my debts, legacies, funeral charges being defrayed:

I do give and bequeath all my right and interest in a farm of two hundred acres of land given and granted to me by ye general Court of this Colony, not being yet taken up. I do give ye same to my loving Sonn-in-law Mr. Samuel Andrew and to my daughter Abigail his wife of Milford and their heirs forever according to deed: or one share of my purchase of Oweantinuck.

Item.

My son Samuel Treat having received a double portion as may appear by deed of gift to him bearing date August 6<sup>th</sup>, 1707. The contents of s<sup>d</sup> deed I do further hereby confirm to ye above s<sup>d</sup> Samuel Treat and his heirs forever.

Item.

As a pledge of my Fatherly love and farewell kindness to all my dear and loving children, viz. Samuel, John, Mary, Robert, Hannah, Joseph, and Abigail, I do give and bequeath four pounds to each of them in pay, payable within one year after my decease.

Item.

I do give to my sonn Joseph Treat one quarter part of my saw mill down stream and one quarter part of all the rights & privileges and appurtenances that do belong to it.

Item.

I do give to my sons Mr. Samuel Andrew and Robert Treat ye remainder of my right to all the privileges thereto belonging in mills, sawing or fulling mill.

I do give to my son Robert Treat my Gold Ring and one half of my plate, buttons, and the other half of my plate, buttons, I give to my sonn Joseph.

Item.

I do give to Samuel Andrew my grandson my three acre lott on the eastern end of Calves Pen Hill to him & his heirs forever.

Item.

I do give to Mr. Samuel Mather junior of Windsor one of my shares in Oweantinoque purchase to him & his heirs forever.

Item.

I do give to my sons Robert and Joseph Treat and their heirs forever all the land they have tilled and sown with wheat on grassie hill until August 6<sup>th</sup> 1707 together with the land they have inclosed in for a yard and a Barne.

Item.

My will is that all the remainder of my estate both real & personall undisposed of by myself shall be equally divided in value among all my dear children or their heirs if any of them shall be deceased. Viz:

My lands to my naturall sons, shares, unless they refuse lands or there be not movables enough without lands to give each of them their equall shares in that case my will is that my sons shall have liberty to buy the lands, giving so much for the lands as the said lands shall be prized by indifferent men in the Inventory of my estate.

Item.

I do give to my children an equall share of my common and undivided lands in Milford Towne viz: to my son Andrew, Robert, Joseph Treat and alsoe to my son Samuel Treat.

Item.

I do nominate and appoint my loving sonn Sam<sup>ll</sup> Andrew and my two sonns Joseph Treat and Robert Treat or any two of them to be the sole Executors of this my last will and testament and my will is that as many of them that shall survive to be Execut<sup>rs</sup> of this my will and testament shall have four pounds apeice for their pains.

And for confirmation of the above written instrument to be my last will and testament, I have hereto set my hand and seal this fifth of January 1707:

Robert Treat sen<sup>r</sup> & Seale. [seal]

The Inventory of his property is "given at country pay prices." Among the items—chiefly personal property—are two slaves valued at £85; land at £217; and £19. 19s., paper currency.

Children of Robert Treat and Jane Tapp, his first wife were:

1. SAMUEL, bapt. Sept. 3, 1648, d. March 18, 1716/17, m. 1st, Elizabeth Mayo March 16, 1674. She was bapt. May 22, 1653 and d. Dec. 4, 1696. m. 2nd, Mrs. Abigail (Willard) Estabrook Aug. 29, 1700. She was b. July 5, 1665, d. Dec. 27, 1746.
2. John, bapt. Oct. 20, 1650, d. Aug. 1, 1714, settled in Newark, N. J. m. 1st, Abigail Tichenor. She was b. Feb. 1, 1654/5, d. Apr. 1, 1713; m. 2nd, Mary (?) who d. Sept. 16, 1731.
3. Mary, bapt. May 23, 1652, d. Nov. 12, 1704. m. Deacon Azariah Crane. He d. Nov. 5, 1730.
4. Robert (Capt.) born Aug. 14, 1654, d. Mar. 20, 1720, m. 1st, Elizabeth (?) about 1678. m. 2nd, Abigail Camp about 1687; b. Mar. 28, 1667, d. Mar. 20, 1742.
5. Sarah, bapt. Oct. 9, 1656, probably died young.
6. Abigail, bapt. 1659? d. Dec. 25, 1727, m. Rev. Samuel Andrew, b. Jan. 29, 1655/6, d. Jan. 24, 1737/8.
7. Hannah, b. Jan. 1, 1660. She d. Mar. 3, 1707, m. Rev. Samuel Mather in 1676. He was born July 5, 1650, d. Mar. 18, 1727/8.
8. Capt. Joseph, b. Sept. 17, 1662, d. Aug. 9, 1721. m. 1st, Francis Bryan, born Feb. 13, 1668, d. Sept. 21, 1703, m. 2nd, Mrs. Elizabeth Merwin Nov. 8, 1705. She died Jan. 10, 1715/6.
9. Jane.
10. Ann, d. before her father.

By his second wife, Mrs. Elizabeth (Hollingsworth) Bryan, Robert Treat probably had no children, as he married her in his 79th year.

## REFERENCES:

New York & New England Families, Talcott, pages 721-2.

III. REV. SAMUEL TREAT (*Robert*,<sup>2</sup> *Richard*<sup>1</sup>), born ———, 1648; baptized Sept. 3, 1648, in Milford, Conn.; died March 18, 1716-17, in his sixty-ninth year (gravestone in Eastham, Mass.); married, first, March 16, 1674, ELIZABETH MAYO, baptized May 22, 1653, died Dec. 4, 1696, aged forty-four, in Eastham, and daughter of Samuel and Tamsen (Lumpkin) Mayo; second, Aug. 29, 1700, Mrs. ABIGAIL (WILLARD) ESTABROOK, born July 5, 1665, in Groton, Mass., died Dec. 27, 1746, aged eighty-two, in Boston, and daughter of Rev. Samuel and Abigail (Sherman) Willard. Mr. Treat graduated at Harvard college in 1669. About 1666, his father and family, and other relatives, had removed from Connecticut to New Jersey, and founded the town of Newark. After graduation, Mr. Treat probably went there also, as in July, 1670, the people of Woodbridge, N. J., instructed their committee for the supply of the pulpit, to apply to Mr. Jeremiah Peck, of Elizabethtown, or to Mr. Samuel Treat "to preach six or seven months." The latter officiated for a short time. Mr. Peck declined a second call to the ministry at Woodbridge in 1675. In 1672, Maj. Robert Treat returned to Milford, Conn., and his son probably returned with him, for the same year, the Rev. Samuel Treat of Milford received a call to become the pastor of the church at Eastham—Indian name, Nauset—on Cape Cod. It is said that he was not ordained till 1675. His salary was £50 *per annum*, which was increased in 1710, to £70, in silver money, with wood enough for his use brought to his door. Besides he received:

"Also a parcel of meadow and upland, given to the town by Manasseth Compton, an Indian; and a parcel of upland and meadow bought of John Young.

"Also, three acres of meadow called the White meadow.

"Also, an island at Billingsgate, with the meadow about it.

"Also, a parcel of marsh in Great Meadow.

"Also, twenty acres of upland at the head of the Cove.

"Also, that the town build a suitable house for him on this land." Pratt's History of Eastham, p. 36.

These gifts are recorded on the town books. In the original record Manasseth Compton is not called an Indian. He was a white man and his correct name was Kempton, a resident of Plymouth. Mr. Josiah Paine, of Harwich, informs me that he has a copy of his letter to the church of Eastham, or rather to Mr. Prence. The house was built a little southeast of the present residence of Seth Knowles, near the brook which ran from Cedar swamp to the Town cove, and not far from an excellent spring of water. The ground where the house once stood has been levelled, so that no trace of the foundation now remains, though as late as 1832, remains of the cellar could still be seen. The house stood a little back of the main road. I visited the place in 1884. The stone bounds of the farm of "twenty acres," marked T, are just where they were probably placed in 1672, when the land was given to Mr. Treat. The place was purchased in 1742, by Col. John Knowles of Mr. Treat's widow, and is now occupied by Seth Knowles, a descendant, who kindly showed me over the farm, and pointed out various spots of interest. Colonel Knowles died Nov. 3, 1757, in his eighty-fifth year, and is buried near Mr. Treat, in the old burying ground. Some few years ago this farm was awarded a prize, as being the best one in Barnstable Co.

#### THE EXTENT AND CHARACTER OF MR. TREAT'S PARISH.

In 1644, the General Court of Mass. granted a new settlement at Nauset, which included the present towns of Wellfleet, Eastham and Orleans, being about fifteen miles long. A church was soon gathered, but the number of inhabitants did not warrant the support of a settled minister till 1672, when Mr. Treat was called. He proved to be a very acceptable pastor, and was greatly beloved and respected by his people, as his long ministry of forty-five years among them proves. His large parish must have required great labor. In 1700, the town of Truro, just north of Eastham, was settled, mostly by emigrants from the latter place. Mr. Treat's sons Samuel, John and Nathaniel, his daughters Jane Freeman, Sarah Rogers and Abigail Stevens, with their husbands, were among the first settlers. His son Joseph resided there some five years, between 1722 and 1727, but whether he lived there before removing to Boston about 1712, is not known. Mr. Treat performed parochial duties in Truro previous to the establishing of a church there in 1711.

Like all good men, Mr. Treat had his enemies. In 1685, "Elizabeth, wife of Jabez Snow, was fined 10s. 'for railing expressions on the Lord's day, used towards Mr. Samuel Treat.'" It is a curious fact that the son of the same Elizabeth Snow afterwards married Mr. Treat's daughter Elizabeth. In addition to his white congregation he had under him a large number of Indians.

John Eliot has been very properly styled "the Apostle of the Indians." He converted many of the Indians about Boston, and also preached the gospel to large congregations in the Plymouth Colony. There were already large numbers of "praying" Indians about Sandwich before 1672. Rev. James Freeman says of Mr. Treat:

"This gentleman is entitled to a distinguished rank among the evangelists of New England; and by his zeal and labours, he not only converted many of the Indians to the faith which he embraced, but he was also the happy instrument of reducing them to a state of order and civilization." *Descrip. and Hist. of Eastham, Coll. Mass. Hist. Soc., p. 170, 1st Series, Vol. 8.*

Knowing that he could not make much impression on the Indians without first gaining their affections, Mr. Treat not only treated them with great kindness on all public occasions, but also visited them at their homes, and joined in their festivities. In that way he gained their good will, and they in turn looked upon him as a father. He could also write and speak their language with perfect accuracy. Once a month he preached to them in their villages, and at other times their teachers read to them a sermon which had been prepared by Mr. Treat, not being allowed to deliver anything composed by themselves. He also translated the "Confession of Faith" into the Nauset dialect, and had it published for the benefit of the Indian tribes. July 12, 1687, Increase Mather wrote a letter to John Leusden, Hebrew professor in the University of Utrecht, which contains these words:

"In Plymouth we have the most active Mr. Samuel Treat laying out himself to save this generation. . . . Not far from a promontory called Cape Cod, there are six assemblies of heathen who are to be reckoned as catechumens, amongst whom there are six Indian preachers: Samuel Treat, pastor of a church at Eastham, preacheth to those congregations in their own language." Cited by Cotton Mather, *Mag. Christ., B. 3, Pt. 3, pp. 568-9, Vol. 1.*

Aug. 23, 1693, Rev. Mr. Treat wrote to Increase Mather, President of Harvard College, giving the following account of the progress of the Gospel among the Indians:

REVEREND AND WORTHY SIR: It being advertised that it would not be unseasonable or unserviceable, at this juncture, to give yourself a true and impartial account both of the number, as also of the present state of our Indians, and acceptation and entertainment of the gospel among them, and their profess'd subjection thereunto; Sir, you may be assur'd as followeth:

"That there are five hundred and five adult persons of Indians within the limits of our township, unto whom, these many years past, I have from time to time imparted the gospel of our Lord Jesus in their language (and I truly hope not without success), and yet I continue in the same service, earnestly imploring, and not without hopes, expecting and waiting for a more plentiful down-pouring of the spirit from on high among them: and I verily do not know of, nor can I learn that there is so much as one of these five hundred Indians that does obstinately absent from, but do jointly frequent and attend on the preaching of the word, and countenance of the same not only frequenting and attending seasons of worship of a divine sanction, but also all other occasional opportunities, when the gospel is dispens'd to them; and when our congregations solemnize publick days of prayer and fasting, or of praises (I usually giving them advertisement thereof), they readily comply therewith, in their respective assemblies.

"They have four distinct assemblies in four villages belonging to our township, in which four assemblies they have four teachers of their own choice, of the more *sober, well-affected, and understanding* persons among them, who duly preach to them, when I am not with them; these Indian teachers repair to my house once a week, to be further instructed (*pro Modulo meo*) in the concerns proper for their service and station.

"There are in the four abovesaid villages four schoolmasters (of the best accomplished for that service) who teach their youth to read and write their own language.

"There are also six justices of the peace (or magistrates) in the four abovesaid villages, who regulate their civil affairs, and punish criminals and transgressors of the civil law; they have their stated courts and other inferiour officers in a subserviency to their civil good order.

“There are among them many of a serious, sober, civilized conversation and deportment, who are making essays towards a further progressive step of obedience and conformity to the rules of the gospel, viz.: an ‘ecclesiastical combination,’ having a great desire to be baptiz’d.

“They are very servicable by their labour in the English vicinity, and have all along since our wars with their nation been very friendly to the English, and forward to serve them in that quarrel. Their deportment and converse, and garb being much more manly and laudable than any other Indians that I have observ’d in the province.

“But, sir, I would not be tedious, only craving your interest at the throne of grace for us, that we may be serviceable to the name and kingdom of our LORD JESUS. So I subscribe,

“Sir, yours willingly,  
SAMUEL TREAT.”

“Eastham, Aug. 23, 1693.”

Cited by Cotton Mather, *Magnalia Christi*, B. 6, C. 6, Sect. 3, pp. 437–8, Vol. 2.

In 1685, there were in the County of Plymouth 1439 Indians, besides boys and girls under twelve. In 1693, there were within the limits of Eastham, 505 adult Indians,—perhaps too high an estimate,—to whom Mr. Treat preached. In 1698, there were about ninety families in the township. The Indians seemed to melt away by contact with civilization. In 1764, by actual census, there were only five Indians in Wellfleet, eleven in Eastham, and ninety-one in Harwich.

#### MR. TREAT AS A PREACHER.

Mr. Treat was not a popular or pleasant preacher. His voice was loud and harsh, so that it could be heard at a great distance from the Meeting House, even amid the wintry blasts that howled over the plains of Nauset. The character of his sermons, teaching for the most part pure Calvinism, must have been rather unpleasant to some of his hearers. An anecdote has been handed down, showing how a really excellent discourse was injured by a bad delivery. The Rev. Mr. Willard, Mr. Treat’s father-in-law, minister of the Old South Church, Boston, from 1678 to 1707, when he died, was an elegant and popular preacher. On a certain occasion Mr. Treat preached one of his best sermons before that

congregation, which displeased them very much. Some of these critics waited upon Mr. Willard, and while admitting that Mr. Treat was doubtless a very pious and worthy man, he was but a wretched preacher, and begged that he might not be allowed to preach in his pulpit again. Mr. Willard made no reply, but borrowing the sermon of his son-in-law, after a few weeks, delivered the same without any alteration. The hearers were delighted, and requested a copy for publication. "See the difference," they cried, "between yourself and your son-in-law; you have preached a sermon on the same text as Mr. Treat's; but whilst his was contemptible, yours is excellent."

Mr. Treat's Calvinism was of the strictest kind. "The fact is established beyond all dispute by a volume of his sermons in manuscript, now in possession of his grandson [Robert Treat Paine]. These sermons are connected in their subjects, are correctly transcribed, and appear to have been designed for publication. They display learning; and the doctrines of his sect are defended with ability and ingenuity. The present age would not bear them, as many of the words which he uses have grown obsolete, and his images too frequently are coarse, and to a fastidious modern ear would approach even to the ludicrous. These sermons are distinguished by their tremendous applications, in which he has caught the spirit of Baxter and Alleine. The following extract from the application of a discourse on Luke xvi: 23, is given as a specimen of his manner.

"Let this truth be an awful and solemn word of awakening to thee, that art yet in thy sins, and hast not truly repented of them. I have pressed thee to seriousness from the consideration of death, and that is solemn; but it may be that seems a little thing to thee, and thou countest it no such great matter to die; and were the Epicurean principle a truth, that man dies in all points like the beasts that perish, it were of little concernment. Well, then, if thou canst see nothing in the grave to make thee serious, I beseech thee to look a little further, and see if thou canst find nothing in hell to startle and amaze thee. Remember thou art not only going to the grave, which it may be thou mayst look upon as an easer of many of the sorrows of this life, and so mayst have some abatement of the terrours of it; but thou art going to hell, the beginner of worse, unspeakably worse sorrows.

"Thou must ere long go to the bottomless pit. Hell hath

enlarged herself and is ready to receive thee. There is room enough for thy entertainment: and dost thou know what it is for a condemned sinner to go to hell? I have told thee in the explication; but let me apply it to thee now.

“ ‘Consider thou art going to a place, prepared by God on purpose to exalt his justice in; a place made for no other employment but torments. Hell is God’s house of correction; and remember God doth all things like himself. When God would show his justice, and what is the weight of his wrath, he makes a hell, where it shall indeed appear to purpose. . . .

“ ‘Consider, God will take delight to execute vengeance on thee. God delights in justice, and in executing His own decrees. Now it was his eternal decree to destroy sinners forever. He purposed to show his power, and make his wrath known, upon the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction. But woe to that soul, whom God shall delight to punish. Now thou laughest at the reproofs which God givest thee by his ministers and people; God will laugh at thee shortly. And how wilt thou fear, when he shall torment thee, and thou shalt roar under thy torments? Thou shalt cry for mercy, and he shall mock thee. Thou now rejoicest in sinning; he will ere long rejoice in thy calamity.

“ ‘Sinner, I beseech thee, realize the truth of these things. Do not go about to dream that this is derogatory to God’s mercy, and nothing but a vain fable to scare children out of their wits withal. God can be merciful, though he make thee miserable. He shall have monuments of that precious attribute, shining like stars in the place of glory, and singing eternal hallelujahs to the praise of him that redeemed them; though to exalt the power of his justice, he damn sinners heaps upon heaps.’ ”

“The conclusions of the other sermons are in general equally alarming. Indeed the author of them appears to have thought it his duty, constantly to persuade men by the terrours of the Lord; and though in his first discourse he professes to ‘preach comfort and joy to the penitent, as well as hell and damnation to the impenitent;’ yet few words of comfort are to be found, whilst there are denunciations of wrath in almost every page. The effect of this preaching was, that his hearers were, several times in the course of his ministry, awakened and alarmed. . . . That they were a holy and godly people, he himself testified; and he doubtless rejoiced in the persuasion, that he had been the happy

instrument of their conversion. His best friends, however, allowed that he dwelt too much on the anger of God; and an instance is related of an innocent young man, who was so frightened with one of his dreadful pictures of the infernal regions, as nearly to be deprived of his senses. Mr. Treat, who really possessed great kindness of heart, became seriously concerned at his situation, and with assiduity and with tenderness exerted himself to console him."

For these anecdotes and extracts and, in fact, for almost all we know about Mr. Treat of a personal character, we are indebted to Rev. James Freeman, a great grandson by his daughter Jane, who often visited the Cape and took much interest in it. He obtained much of his information from Robert Treat Paine and his sister, Mrs. Greenleaf, also grandchildren of Mr. Treat, by his daughter Eunice. See Mr. Freeman's *Description and History of Eastham*, written in 1802, and published in the *Collection of the Massachusetts Historical Society*, pp. 154-186, 1st Series, Vol. 8.

#### SICKNESS AND DEATH

Mr. Treat possessed a remarkably vigorous constitution. Near the end of his life his health began to fail. In 1714, Nehemiah Hobart was employed by the town to assist him, being much disabled by sickness. A second attack of the palsy terminated his life, March 18, 1716-7, to the great grief of all who knew him. He died at the time of "the great snow," which fell to the depth of six feet. The wind drifted the snow so badly, that the funeral had to be deferred a few days till an arch could be dug through some of the drifts, in order that the body might be carried to the grave, a distance of about half a mile. The Indians were allowed, at their earnest request, as a token of respect for their deceased friend, to assist in bearing the body to its place of burial. Sewall, in his *Diary*, March 28, 1716-7, makes this note: "Am told of the death of Mr. Treat of Eastham. The Lord fit me for my Turn." *Coll. Mass. Hist. Soc.*, p. 126, 5th Series, Vol. 7.

Mr. Treat was a man of deep piety, cheerful, good natured, a kind and loving father and husband, pleasant and even witty in his conversation, though a stern and consistent Calvinist in religion. He was greatly beloved by his people, and the Indians revered him as a father. He is still spoken of by the old men of

Eastham as "honest Treat." The clergy of the day held him in high esteem; John Cotton and Increase Mather speak of him in high terms. He delivered the Plymouth Election sermon in 1678, and the Election sermon, May 27, 1713, from Ps. 2:8. A full account of Mr. Treat may be found in Sibley's *Harvard Graduates*, pp. 304-314, Vol. 2.

Children of Samuel Treat, born in Eastham, by his first marriage to Elizabeth Mayo:

1. JANE, b. Dec. 6, 1675; d. Sept. 1, 1729; m. Oct. 11, 1694, Constant Freeman.
2. Elizabeth, b. July 24, 1676; d. March 3, 1755; m. about 1695, Jabez Snow.
3. Sarah, b. June 20, 1678; d. Sept. 26, 1728; m. Dec. 10, 1700, Thomas Rogers.
4. Samuel, b. July —, 1680; d. Oct. 23, 1733; m. 1st, Oct. 27, 1708, Joanna Vickery; 2d, July 26, 1721, Mrs. Mary (Sears) Street.
5. Mary, b. March 16, 1682; d. Jan. 4, 1722-3; m. Dec. 10, 1700, Dea. John Rich.
6. Robert, b. Feb. 24, 1683-4; d. April 30, 1701, of a fever; buried next day.
7. ABIGAIL, b. June 13, 1686; d. —; m. Oct. 7, 1708, Richard Stevens. (See Stevens Family.)
8. Joseph, b. Nov. 19, 1690; d. Feb. —, 1756; m. 1st, June 25, 1713, Mary Larkin; 2d, Dec. 8, 1742, Mrs. Sarah Mary (Seward) Farmer.
9. Joshua, b. March 17, 1692; d. Nov. 6, 1753; m. about 1720 (pub. March 19, 1719-20), Mercy Higgins, who was b. March 20, 1697, and dau. of Isaac and Lydia Higgins of Eastham. He was buried in the old burying ground at Orleans, South Eastham, previous to 1797. His widow, Mercy, m. Nov. 28, 1754, for her second husband, John Paine, of Eastham, b. Sept. 18, 1690; d. Nov. —, 1771, and son of John and Bennet (Freeman) Paine.
10. John, b. May 17, 1693; d. about 1762; m. Dec. 6, 1716, Abigail Young.
11. Nathaniel, b. April 15, 1694; d. about 1735; m. Oct. 8, 1719, Mary Lyon.

By his second marriage to Abigail (Willard) Estabrook his children were:

12. EUNICE, b. Sept. 27, 1704; d. Oct. 17, 1747; m. April 21, 1721, Rev. Thomas Paine.
13. ROBERT, b. Jan. 21, 1706-7; d. Jan. 15, 1723-4, aged 17, of a fever, while a sophomore at Harvard College.

(See Stevens Family.)

REFERENCE:

The Treat Family by John Harvey Treat A. M., pages 132 to 179.

## UYTEN BOGERT FAMILY.

GYSPERT UYTEN BOGERT, usually called Gyspert Elbertszen Van Loenen, said to have been the son of John Uytten Bogert, court preacher to Maurice, Prince of Nassau, owned lands up the Hudson River near Catskill at Boomties Hook, for which he had an Indian deed, dated May 26, 1686. His wife was Willemtijie Claes. They were married before 1660.

On April 22, 1674, he deeded land at Maspeths Kill to Jan Jense Slot. He and his wife lived on Wall Street in 1686. They were both alive as late as September 24, 1699.

The children of Gyspert Uytten Bogert and Willemtijie Claes were:

1. Claes, bapt. Oct. 23, 1661.
2. Nicolaes, bapt. Nov. 26, 1662.
3. Altje, bapt. Oct. 22, 1664.
4. Altje, bapt. Jan. 27, 1666; married as Altje Van Loenen to Zacharius Laurenszen; married 2nd on Nov. 14, 1695 Jacobus Van Deusen. He died before Sept. 11, 1726.
5. NEELTJE, bapt. April 13, 1667, married Isaac Stoutenburgh July 2, 1690. She died Oct. 3, 1731.
6. Maria, bapt. Oct. 26, 1668.
7. Maritje, bapt. March 10, 1670.
8. Grietie, bapt. February 3, 1672.
9. Jacobus, bapt. March 18, 1674.
10. Dirck, bapt. December 29, 1675, married June 24, 1698 Elizabeth Eckerzen. She married 2nd Ralph Potter on May 26, 1713.
11. Jacobus, bapt. May 7, 1678.

## REFERENCES:

- N. Y. Genealogical and Biographical Record 1922, pages 68-70, 270-9.  
 Ancient Families of New York, Purple, page 24 note.  
 Calendar of Land Papers, page 28.  
 Manuscript Genealogy of Stoutenburgh Family in handwriting of Mrs. Wm. H. Anthon.

(See Stoutenburgh Family.)

## VAN GELDER FAMILY.

I. JAN VAN GELDER was a carpenter. He swore allegiance to the English with the other citizens of New York sometime between the 21st and 26th of October, 1664. He was appointed assistant measurer of grains January 25, 1670. In 1684 he paved streets and acted as funeral director. His son Abraham was of the same profession and was also a carpenter.

II. On June 12, 1689 a Jan Van Gelder (probably Johannes, Jr.) was a soldier under Leisler who took by force "drink" from Kingsland and Tudor. On October 7, 1693 Jan Van Gelder was a witness in a case, his son Hermanus, being Justice of the Peace and Alderman in about 1701.

Jan Van Gelder may have been related to William Gelder, who married Anna Catharyn June 4, 1644, but there is no proof of the fact. He was living on Broadway in 1686. Jan Van Gelder married Tanneken Montenack about 1660 or 1661.

Jan Van Gelder may have been related to William Gelder, who following children:

1. Hester, bapt. January 26, 1662; married Pieter Willemzen Room November 26, 1684. She died in 1729.
2. Johannes, bapt. August 27, 1664; married Aefje Roos, als boven, May 19, 1686. She was the daughter of Gerritt Jansen Roos.
3. Hermanus, bapt. Sept. 5, 1666; married Teuntie Teunis from New Utrecht January 9, 1689. Will dated January 28, 1743.
4. Elizabeth, bapt. January 11, 1669; married Andries Marschalk from Vlissingen in Zeelandt, May 22, 1690.
5. Maria, bapt. January 28, 1671; married Andries Joriszen Alst July 24, 1689.
6. Abraham, bapt. Nov. 13, 1673; married Catalyntie Ellas, als boven, January 6, 1695.
7. Cornelia, bapt. February 2, 1676.
8. CORNELIA, bapt. Dec. 25, 1678; married Philip Dally Oct. 22, 1701 of Staten Island. (See Dally Family.)
9. Emereus, bapt. Dec. 29, 1680.

## REFERENCES :

- N. Y. Genealogical and Biographical Society Collections,  
Vol. I. Births.
- N. Y. Historical Society Collections of 1892, page 298.  
1895, pages 67-9.  
1909, page 126.  
1912, page 49.
- Documentary History, State of N. Y. Vol. III, pages 77,  
600.
- Iconography of New York, Vol. VI, page 646.
- Historic Homes and Families of New York, Vol. I, page  
38.
- Further information might be gotten from American An-  
cestry, Vol. VIII, page 194.

(See Dally Family.)

## VAN TIENHOVEN FAMILY.

AEFJE VAN TIENHOVEN was the wife of Peter Stoutenburgh, whom she married July 25, 1649. She was probably the sister of Cornelis Van Tienhoven the Schout. They may have come from Tienhoven, a village in South Holland. Cornelis Van Tienhoven held many offices under the Dutch West India Company. He married Rachel Vinge, a step-daughter of Jan Jansen Damen, and lived on Pearl Street, above Maiden Lane. Having been dismissed from office in 1656 in disgrace, he committed suicide. Dawson, the historian, calls him an unprincipled man of bad habits and exceedingly unpopular. Winfield's Hudson County, page 34, gives him the same character. Van Tienhoven was the prime mover of the massacre of the Indians in 1643, Feb. 25, at Pavonia, New Jersey.

After Cornelis Van Tienhoven committed suicide, his sister Aefje Van Tienhoven and Peter Stoutenburgh, her husband, took care of his widow and children.

## REFERENCE:

Historical Magazine 1867, page 364 Note.

(See Stoutenburgh Family.)

## VICKERS FAMILY.

The name is spelled Vickers, Vickres, Vrickers.

The family was probably as follows:

- I. DAVID VICKERS married Johanna Madock or Maddock and had John.
- II. JOHN VICKERS married ————— Dow, daughter of Gerritt Dow and Allettie —————, his wife, of St. Christopher, and they had Johanna.
- III. JOHANNA VICKERS married Edward Blagge, May 12, 1703.

(See Blagge Family.)

## WESSELS FAMILY.

Annetje Wessels was the wife of William Janse Rooman or Will. I have been unable to solve this line or prove it.

S. F.

(See Will Family.)

## WILL FAMILY.

Johannes Will was the husband of Judith or Johanna Boomper. There are indications that the family lived near Albany. It seems certain that Johannes Will and Judith Boomper had at least two children.

1. Hendrick, m. Magdalena Hann Nov. 25, 1761.
2. Elizabeth, m. Isaac Stoutenburgh, Jan. 29, 1761.

The following are indicated as being also children of Johannes Will and Judith Boomper.

3. Philip.
4. William.
5. Christian.

(See Stoutenburgh Family.)

## REFERENCES:

- Marriages Reformed Dutch Church, page 205.  
 N. Y. State Library Bulletin No. 58, 1902, page 521.  
 Minutes of Council, Vol. 27, page 173.  
 Minutes of Council, Vol. 29, page 179.  
 N. Y. Marriages, Book Y, page 246.

## WILLARD FAMILY.

GEORGE WILLARD was the son of Richard Willard and Joane Morebread of Horsmonden, Kent, England, where he was baptized December 4, 1614. He probably came to this country with his brother, Simon, in May, 1634. He was at Scituate as early as 1638/9 when he took the oath of allegiance on February 1st.

There is some reason to believe that his wife was Dorothy Dunster, daughter of Henry Dunster of Baleholt, near Bury, Lancaster, England (First President of Harvard College). In 1641 George Willard was fined for having erroneous opinions. He was probably either dead or removed from the Colony in 1673 as he is not mentioned in the division of public lands. When he was fined for having erroneous opinions, the opinions seem to indicate that he was a member of the Church of England. The opinion held was probably that infants should be sprinkled when baptized and not immersed or half-drowned in the rite of baptism. This peculiar belief was then held by the Rev. Chauncey, afterwards President of Harvard College. The question as to whether children should be sprinkled or immersed when baptised was one of the many religious tempests in a teapot that stirred up strife and bad feeling in the Colony of Massachusetts; Dunster, Willard's father-in-law holding out for sprinkling, Chauncey insisting on immersion. Laws were passed on the subject, making immersion compulsory and fines collected for non-compliance with the same. Willard was one of those found guilty under the law. Of course it is possible that Willard was a papist, as it is generally supposed that he and his family moved to the Catholic colony of Maryland. The fact that all of the Willard children were baptized in 1645 would indicate that Willard held out in his views till the end. In 1645 sprinkling or immersion was made optional, but either one or the other was compulsory by law.

George Willard probably died before 1659.

He had at least three children:

1. DEBORAH, bapt. Sept. 14, 1645; married Paul Sears. He died Feb. 20, 1707, aged 70. (See Sears Family.)

2. Daniel, bapt. Sept. 14, 1645; married at Yarmouth June 10, 1695 to Esther (Hester) Matthews, daughter of James Matthews of Yarmouth. She was born January 8, 1650/1. He died April 20, 1712. She died June 28, 1726. No issue.
3. Joshua, bapt. Nov. 2, 1645. He probably remained in Maryland where the family removed from Massachusetts.

Daniel and Deborah moved back to the Cape, but Joshua probably remained in Maryland.

#### REFERENCES:

Genealogical Dictionary of New England, Vol. IV, page 553.

Sears Genealogy, page 44.

Willard Memoir, pages 40, 98, 104, 106, 128.

Plymouth Colony Records, Vol. I, page 110; Vol. II, pages 14, 17.

Early New England People by Titcomb, pages 80-91.

(See Sears Family.)

## WOOD FAMILY.

ABIGAIL WOOD married John Dunham October 17, 1619, at Leyden in Holland. No record of her father and mother is found. However, she was probably a distant relation of her husband.

(See Dunham Family.)

## GENERAL INDEX

---

- Abbott, James, 146,  
Achter Cull, N. J. 175,  
Ackerman, Arthur W. 17,  
Adventurers (Underwriters) 35, 59,  
Albany, N. Y. 3, 4, 211,  
Alden, John, 74,  
    David, 139,  
Aldrics, Pieter, 28,  
Alleine, Rev. ———, 201,  
Allen, William, 61,  
    Mr. ———, 169,  
Allerton, Isaac, 31,  
Allyn, Capt. John, 183, 186, 190, 191,  
Alst, Andries Joriszen, 207,  
American Flag, on first Am. built War Ship in Europe, 111,  
Amherst, Sir Jeffrey, 3,  
Amsterdam, Holland, 3, 78,  
Andrew, Rev. Samuel, 173, 193, 194, 195,  
Andros, Sir Edmund, 158, 163, 164, 165, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172,  
    183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192,  
Anglo-Saxon Names, 38, 44,  
Anthon's "Cadillac House," Detroit, 21,  
Anthon, Caroline Graves, 7,  
    Catherine, 6,  
    Charles, 5, 6,  
    Charles Edward, 7,  
    Dorothea Louisa, 6,  
    Edward, 6, 7,  
    Elizabeth Van Schaick, 7,  
    Frederick, 7,  
    Genevieve, 6, 7, 81,  
    George, 6, 7,  
    George Christian, 3, 4, 5, 6, 22, 23, 91, 92,  
    Grace, 8,  
    Henry, 6,  
    Jane, 6,  
    Joanna, 7,  
    John, 6, 7, 8, 89,  
    John Hone, 7,  
    John Michael, 3,  
    Judith, 7,

- Anthon, Louisa, 6,  
     Maria, 6,  
     Marian Graves, 8,  
     Maria Theresa, 7,  
     Philip Hone, 7,  
     William, 6,  
     William Henry, 7, 103,  
 Antwerp, Belgium, 141,  
 Apple Trees to Canada from France, 84,  
 Appleton, Capt. ———, 180,  
     Maj. Samuel, 181,  
 Archambault, Angelique, 20,  
 Argall, Samuel, 83, 114,  
 Arnheim, Holland, 28, 55,  
 Arquidneck, Mass., 66,  
 Attwood (Atwood) Abigail, 10, 11, 12,  
     Apphia, 8, 9, 10,  
     Bangs, 10, 12,  
     Bethia, 10, 11,  
     Daniel, 8,  
     Eldad, 8,  
     Eleaser, 9, 10,  
     Elisha, 10, 11,  
     Enoch, 11,  
     Ezra, 12,  
     Grace, 12,  
     Hannah, 8, 9, 10, 11,  
     Heman, 11, 12,  
     John, 8, 10, 11, 12, 39,  
     Joseph, 9, 10, 11, 19, 47,  
     Joshua, 9, 10, 11,  
     Machiel, 10,  
     Mary, 10, 11, 16,  
     Meciel, 9,  
     Medad, 8,  
     Nathan, 15, 16, 17,  
     Nathaniel, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 69, 78,  
         112, 140,  
     Phebe Sears, 12,  
     Rebecca Sears, 12,  
     Rhoda, 12,  
     Richard, 11, 12  
     Robert, 12,  
     Sarah (Sally), 13, 14, 15, 78,  
     Stephen, 8, 9, 10, 13, 19, 53,  
     Stevens, 11, 12, 13, 14,  
     Thomas, 9, 10,

- Aubert, Charles, 36,  
     Francois, 32,  
 Aunis, France, 82  
 Aussion, Dominique, 137,  
 Ayot, (See Hayot)  
 Bacon, Nathaniel, 99,  
 Baleholt, Eng., 54, 130, 212,  
 Baltimore, Md., 14,  
 Ballard, Samuel, 14,  
 Bangs, Apphia, 8, 19,  
     Bethia, 19,  
     Edward, 8, 18,  
     Hannah, 19,  
     John, 8, 19,  
     Jonathan, 18, 19,  
     Joshua, 19,  
     Lydia, 18, 19,  
     Mercy, 19,  
     Rebecca, 8, 18, 19,  
     Sarah, 19,  
 Banks, Sir John, 18,  
 Barber, Historian, 178,  
 Barker, Isaac, 108,  
 Barlow, George, 57,  
 Barnes, Joshua, 41,  
 Barneveldt, Johan Van Olden (See Stoutenburgh)  
 Barnstable County, Mass., 8, 9, 10, 15, 43, 57, 99, 130, 133, 134,  
     197,  
 Barrett, Walter, 87,  
 Barvis, Marie, 22,  
 Bassett, William, 134,  
 Batiscan, Canada, 29,  
 Baudry (Des Buttes), Anne, 20,  
     Catherine, 21,  
     Claude Charles, 21,  
     Francoise, 20,  
     Guillaume, 20, 21, 137,  
     Jacques, 20, 21, 22,  
     Jean, 20, 21, 22, 51,  
     Jean Baptiste, 21,  
     Jeanne, 20,  
     Joseph, 20, 21,  
     LaMarche, 20,  
     Louise, 21,  
     Louise Genevieve, 21  
     Louise Marguerite Genevieve, 22,  
     Madeleine, 20,

- Baudry (Des Buttes), Marguerite, 20,  
     Marguerite Amable, 22,  
     Marie, 20,  
     Marie Françoise, 21,  
     Marie Jeanne, 21,  
     Marie Josephine, 21,  
     Marie Madeleine, 20,  
     Pierre, 21,  
     Rene, 21,  
     Urbain, 20, 21, 29,  
 Bauliard, François, 50,  
 Baumhart, John Gottlieb, 3,  
 Baxter, Thomas, 100,  
     Rev. ———, 201,  
 Bay of Quiberon, 111,  
 Bayard, Nicholas, 48,  
 Blackstone's Commentaries, Anthon's, 6,  
 Blackwell, Mikael (Michael), 61, 63, 64,  
 Blagge, Alletta, 26,  
     Benjamin, 24, 25, 26, 32, 55,  
     Edward, 25, 26, 210,  
     Elizabeth, 25,  
     Henry, 25,  
     Iyasltea, 25,  
     Johanna, 26,  
     Johannes, 26,  
     Joseph, 25,  
     Judith, 25, 26, 32,  
     Mary, 25,  
     Nathaniel, 25,  
     Philip, 25,  
     Rebecca, 25,  
     Samuel, 25, 26,  
 Bradford, Allis, 122,  
     Gov. William, 31, 33, 40, 66, 74, 138, 181,  
     Maj. William, 122,  
 Braesja (Brasher) Abraham, 49,  
     Lucas, 49,  
 Braintree, Mass., 25, 149,  
 Brancourt, Jean, 83,  
 Brandford, Conn., 176,  
 Brasted, Eng., 38,  
 Bray, Thomas, 47,  
 Beachampe, Dogget, 59,  
     John, 59,  
 Beauchampe, 58, 59,  
 Beaulieu, Sir ———, 22,  
 Beauport, Canada, 80, 137,

Beaupré, Mr. ———, 93,  
 Beers, Richard, 179,  
 Belanger, Francois, 80,  
 Belange, Lieut., 93,  
 Belleperche, Dennis, 81,  
     Pierre, 81,  
 Bennet, Miss ———, 58,  
 Bergen, N. J., 55, 56,  
 Berranger, Mr. ———, 93,  
 Berrian, John, 56,  
     Peter, 56,  
 Bertin, Jeanne, 20,  
 Best Farm in Barnstable County, 197,  
 Brewer of Rocrois, France, 92, 93,  
 Brewster, Fear, 31,  
     Jonathan, 30, 31,  
     Love, 31, 35,  
     Mary, 30, 31,  
     Patience, 31, 72, 108,  
     Prudence, 30,  
     William, 30, 31, 108,  
     Wrastling, or Wrestling, 31,  
 Brewster, Mass., 12, 66,  
 Billerica, Mass., 104,  
 Billingsgate, Mass., 196,  
 Bisse, James, 52,  
 Bissot, Francois, 36,  
 Brinckley Divorce Case, 7,  
 Brinley, George, 188,  
 Bloementier, Anna Sabina, 27,  
 Bloody Brook, Mass., 179,  
 Blouin, Catherine, 80,  
 Boardman, Thomas, 128,  
 Boat, first built in Mass., 18,  
 Bocquet, Simple (Temple), 22, 93,  
 Bodenbeck Family, 102,  
 Bogardus, Everardus, 48,  
 Bogart, Helena, 146,  
     John, 49, 145,  
 Bogert (See Uytten Bogert)  
 Boomper (Boemper, Bompers), Abraham, 27,  
     Anna Maria, 27,  
     Lodevyk, 27,  
     Jacob, 27,  
     Johanna, 27, 211,  
     Judith, 27, 211,  
 Boomtjes Hook, N. Y., 206,  
 Boonen, Metje, 28,

- Borrea, Francis, 145,  
 Boston, Mass., 12, 13, 14, 15, 25, 30, 37, 53, 55, 70, 73, 78, 99,  
 100, 104, 121, 123, 149, 167, 169, 185, 186, 191, 197, 198,  
 Boston Tea Party, 190,  
 Boucher, Elizabeth, 80,  
     Gaspard, 29, 96,  
     Madeleine, 20, 29,  
     Marguerite, 29,  
     Marie, 29,  
     Marin, 29,  
     Nicholas, 29,  
     Pierre, 29,  
 Boucherville, Canada, 20,  
 Boudeau, Francois, 76,  
     Francoise, 76,  
     Jeanne, Jehanne, 76,  
 Boudoin, Madeleine, 21,  
 Bourdet (Bourdette, see also Burdet), Hester, 86, 87,  
     Samuel, 106,  
 Bourne, Mr. ———, 61,  
     Richard, 65.  
     Sylvanus, 10,  
 Boutet, (See St. Martin), Catherine, 137,  
     Martin, 115, 136,  
     Michel, 136,  
 Bowdoinham, Me., 15,  
 Bowling Green, N. Y., 88,  
 Boyd, John, 190,  
 Broad Street, N. Y., House on, 5,  
 Broadway, N. Y., House on, 207,  
 Broewer, Margarita, 27,  
 Brower, Abraham, 146,  
 Bruen, Obadiah, 177,  
 Brussels, Belgium, 102, 141,  
 Bryan, Elizabeth, 149, 173, 196,  
     Francis, 195,  
     Richard, 173,  
 Buckingham, Daniel, 153,  
     Thomas, 151,  
 Bulkley, Historian, 169,  
 Bunker Hill, Mass., 190,  
 Bunyan, Sarah, 14,  
 Burdet (See also Bourdette, Bourdet), Edward, 32,  
     Esther, 32,  
     Estienne, 32,  
     Judith, 32,  
     Samuel, 26, 32,  
     Suzanne, 32,

- Burge, John, 129,  
     Thomas, 61,  
 Burke, Armorer, 38,  
 Burgtem, Allard Anthony, 28,  
 Burgoyne, Gen'l., 4,  
 Burrill, Caroline, 90,  
 Bursell, Anna, 124,  
     James, 124,  
 Byvang, Evert, 143,  
 Cades, the Sexton, 14,  
 Cadillac, Antoine de la Mothe, 81,  
 Cadillac House, Detroit, 21,  
 Callender, William Mott, 7,  
     William Stanhope, 7,  
 Calvinism, 201, 203,  
 Cambridge, Eng., 30, 104,  
 Camp, Abigail, 195,  
 Campau, Baptiste, 92,  
 Campfield, Matthew, 149, 152, 177,  
 Cape Madeleine, Canada, 29,  
 Carpenter, Alexander, 33, 74, 138,  
     Alice, 33, 74, 138,  
     Juliana, 138,  
     Mr. ———, 52,  
 Carteret, Gov. of N. J., 55, 176,  
 Castle, S'Hugenay-Steen, 102,  
 Catharyn, Anna, 207,  
 Catskill, N. Y., 206,  
 Champion, Henry, 150,  
 Champlain, N. Y., 20,  
 Champlain, Samuel de, 29, 36, 83, 84, 85,  
 Chapman, Aaron, 52,  
 Charleston, S. C., 78, 88, 104,  
 Charlestown, Mass., 39, 46,  
 Charter of Connecticut, 154, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172,  
     184, 188, 189, 190, 191,  
 Charter Oak (Conn.), 187, 188,  
 Chateau Richer, Can., 36, 50, 76, 81, 82,  
 Chatham, Mass., 47, 134,  
 Chatham Street, N. Y., 88,  
 Chauncey, Rev. ———, 212,  
 Chichester, Eng., 18,  
 China and Porcelain in Colonial Mass., 118,  
 Claes, Aeltie, Aeltje or Keltie, 48, 107,  
     Annetje, 34,  
     Willemtje, 34, 206,  
 Clap, President, 188,

- Clarke, Daniel, 163,  
     John, 16,  
 Claves, Samuel, 52,  
 Cranberries, 119,  
 Crane, Azariah, 177, 195,  
     Deacon, 177,  
     Jasper, 176, 177, 178,  
     Mr. ———, 152,  
 Cramer, Dorothea Rosina Louisa, 3,  
     John Theophilus, 3,  
 Crow (Crow), 38,  
 Cedar Street, N. Y., 48,  
 Celustus, Marie, 81,  
 Cheneessio, Indian Chief, 91,  
 Cherryfield, Mass., 70,  
 Chène, Pierre, 94,  
 Chretienne, Madeline, 29,  
 Cregier, Elizabeth, 48,  
     Martin, 48,  
 Crevalier, Francois, 50,  
 Crevier, Jeanne, 29,  
 Clinton, Charles, 90,  
 Clutier, Françoise, 50,  
     Genevieve, 81,  
 Coat of Arms, "Crowe", 37, 38,  
 Cobb, Mary, 53,  
     Mercy, 68,  
     Thomas, 67, 69,  
 Coddington, William, 59,  
 Coit, John, 40,  
 Cole, Daniel, 8, 19, 67,  
     Esther, 8,  
     Job, 35,  
     John, 75,  
 Coleman, Sarah, 149,  
 Collier, Elizabeth, 33, 35, 138,  
     Jane, 35,  
     Mary, 35, 72, 73, 108,  
     Rebecca, 35,  
     Sarah, 31, 35,  
     William, 33, 35, 73, 74, 108,  
 Collin, Catherine, 80,  
 Collins, Benjamin, 140,  
 Columbia College, N. Y., 5, 6,  
 Comeau, Françoise, 137,  
 Commission to Maj. Robert Treat, 158, 180,  
 Commission of Geo. C. Anthon, 4,

- Commissioners of Forfeiture, 145,  
 Committee of Safety, New Haven, Conn., 157,  
 Compton (Kempton), Manasseth, 196, 197,  
 Congress of United Colonies, 35, (See United Colonies)  
 Connecticut Boundary, 164, 165, 183, 184,  
 Constable Hook, (Bergen) N. J., 55,  
 Continental Navy, 111,  
 Cook, Anna, 8,  
 Cooke, Mr. ———, 112,  
 Cornbury, Lord, 52,  
 Corneliszen (Stile), Theunis, 34,  
 Coudenberg, 102,  
 Couillard, Charles, 36,  
     Elizabeth, 36, 80, 81,  
     Gertrude, 36,  
     Guillaume, 36, 85, 114,  
     Louis, 36,  
     Louise, 36,  
     Madeleine, 36,  
     Marguerite, 36,  
     Marie, 36,  
     Nicholas, 36,  
 Count de Domberg, 103,  
 Cours, Barent, 28,  
 Courturier, Francoise, 50,  
 Couture, Louise, 36,  
 Couvreur, Jeanne, 137,  
 Coventry, Eng., 39,  
 Croghan, George, 4,  
 Cromwell (See Crowell), 37,  
 Crosby, William, 144,  
 Crowell (Croell, Crowe, Crow, Crowes, Cromwell)  
     Agnes, 46,  
     Anne, 37,  
     Bethia, 10, 47,  
     Christopher, 47,  
     Deborah, 47,  
     Edward, 45,  
     Elishua, 39, 46,  
     Elizabeth, 46, 47,  
     Gilbert, 37,  
     Gyles, 38,  
     Hannah, 39, 47,  
     Jeremiah, 47,  
     John, 37, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 104, 117,  
         122, 134,  
     Joseph, 47,  
     Judah, 43,

- Crowell, Lydia, 46,  
     Mary, 39, 47,  
     Mehitable, 46, 47,  
     Mas, 43,  
     Moses, 43, 46,  
     Paul, 47,  
     Robert, 39,  
     Sackville (Sir), 37, 38,  
     Samuel, 37, 39, 43, 45, 46,  
     Susannah, 47,  
     Thomas, 39, 43, 44, 45, 46,  
     William, 37, 39,  
     Yelverton (Elverton), 37, 44, 45, 46,  
 Crown Point, Capture, 111,  
 Curacao, Dutch W. Ind. 3,  
 Curtis, John, 178,  
 Cushman, Elkanah, 61,  
     Robert, 138,  
 Church, Benjamin, 74, 139,  
 Clutings, 102,  
 Cruger, John, 87,  
 Dabent, Mr. ———, 22,  
 Dally (Daly, Daillje, Dealy,) Abraham, 49,  
     Anna, 48,  
     Anneke, 48, 144, 145,  
     Catherine, 48,  
     Cornelia, 49,  
     Elizabeth, 49,  
     Hannah, 48,  
     Hendrick, 48,  
     Jan (John), 48,  
     Johannes, 48,  
     Joris, 48,  
     Lydia, 48,  
     Maria, 48, 49,  
     Marrite, 48,  
     Marytja, 49,  
     Nathan, 48,  
     Nathaniel, 107,  
     Nicholas, 48,  
     Philipus (Philip), 48, 207,  
 Dalpah, Philip, 48 (See Dally)  
 Damen, Jan Jansen, 209,  
 Danforth, William S., 129,  
 Dartmouth, Mass., 35,  
 Dartmouth, Eng., 138,  
 Davis, Judge, 74,  
 Davison, William, 30,

- Dawson, Historian, 209,  
 Draft Riots, New York, 7,  
 De Belestre, Mr. ———, 22,  
     Piquotée, 22,  
 De Brancourt, Jean, 83,  
 De Champlain (See Champlain)  
 De Kay, Mr. ———, 93,  
 De La Fond, Ehenna, 29,  
 De Lalande, Jacques, 36,  
 De La Noy, Peter, 56,  
 De La Noye, Mary, 53,  
     Philip, 53,  
 De L'evy, Henry, 84,  
 De Marnix, Walbrug, 141, 142,  
 De May (DeMuy) Company, 91, 92, 93,  
 De Meerte (See Meert)  
 De Montmorency, M., 84,  
 De Monts, 83,  
 De Navarre (See Navarre)  
 De Nesle, Capt. 80, 113,  
 De Peyster, Frederick, 88,  
 De Poutrincourt, M., 83, 114,  
 De Puybaro, Jean, 20,  
 De St. Martin (See St. Martin)  
 De Ville, Capt. 29, 96,  
 Desbats, Marguerite, 94,  
 Des Buttes (See Baudry) Father, 22,  
     Guillaume, 21, 22,  
     Jacques, 22, 92, 93,  
     Jean, 21, 22, 92,  
     Joseph, 93,  
     Marguerite, 94,  
 Desportes Hellene, 85, 114,  
 Despres, Genevieve, 36,  
 Du Buisson, Fief of, 80,  
 Du Buisson (See also Guyon), Genevieve Guyon, 50, 82,  
 Du Buk, Joseph, 93,  
 Dugay, Jacques, 20,  
 Dussault, Joseph, 22,  
     Sieur, 29,  
 Declaration of Independence, 173,  
 Deerfield, Conn., 159, 179, 180,  
 Deming, John, 149, 152,  
 Dennis, Mass., 39, 44, 47, 72, 119,  
 Dennis, Rev. Josiah, 39,  
     Robert, 43,  
 Derby (Paugasset), Conn., 151,  
 Derwhitten, Eng., 38,

- Detroit, Mich., 3, 4, 5, 6, 21, 22, 81, 91, 92,  
 Dexter, Thomas, 66,  
 Dey Street, New York, House on, 5,  
 Dickerson, John, 100,  
     Philemon, 100,  
 Dieppe, France, 29, 80, 83, 96, 113, 114,  
 Dimmock, Thomas, 43,  
 Dividend Hill, N. J., 177,  
 Division of Cattle, Plymouth Colony, 8, 18,  
 Dixon, on Surnames, 44,  
 Doane, Isaac, 67, 68,  
     John, 19,  
     Martha, 9,  
     Ruth, 68,  
     Samuel, 9,  
 Doggett, Samuel, 13, 14, 15,  
 Dongan, Gov. Thomas, 164, 168, 169, 183, 185, 186,  
 Dotey, Joseph, 63, 65,  
 Douw, Gerard, 26,  
 Dow, Allettie, 52, 210,  
     Garrett (Gerritt), 52, 210,  
     Gerard, 26, 52,  
     Jacobus, 52,  
     Johanna, 52,  
     Mary, 52,  
     Sarah, 52,  
 Doyon, Anonyme, 50,  
     Antoine, 50,  
     Charles, 51,  
     Elizabeth, 51,  
     Genevieve, 50,  
     Ignace Prisque, 50,  
     Jacques, 50,  
     Jean, 50, 76, 82,  
     Louis, 51,  
     Louise, 51,  
     Madeleine, 50,  
     Marguerite, 50,  
     Marie, 50,  
     Marie Angelique, 51,  
     Marie Charlotte, 50, 51,  
     Marie Louise, 21, 22, 92, 93, 94,  
     Nicolas, 50, 51, 82,  
     Thomas, 50,  
 Duc de Ventadour, 84,  
 Duchesne, Adrien, 81,  
 Duck, Miss ———, 38,

- Dudley, Dean, 19,  
 Duke of Brabant, 102,  
     Hamilton, 165,  
     Monmouth, 166,  
     York, 175,  
 Dummer, Jeremiah, 188,  
 Dunham, Abigail, 8, 53,  
     Benajah, 54,  
     Benjamin, 53,  
     Daniel, 54,  
     Dorothy, 53,  
     Hannah, 53,  
     John, 8, 53, 214,  
     Jonathan, 53,  
     Joseph, 53,  
     Persis, 53,  
     Samuel, 53,  
     Thomas, 53,  
 Dunscombe, Catherine, 87,  
 Dunster, Dorothy, 54, 124, 129, 130, 212,  
     Elizabeth, 54, 130,  
     Henry, 54, 130, 212,  
     Simon Willard, 130,
- Eady, Samuel, 65,  
 Earl, Maria, 48,  
 Earl of Argyle, 166,  
     Moy, 4,  
     Rutland, 37,  
     Sunderland, 186,  
     Sussex, 38,  
 Eastern Harbor, Mass., 140,  
 Eastham (Nauset), Mass., 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 15, 18, 53, 57, 66,  
     68, 69, 71, 72, 74, 75, 99, 108, 111, 135, 172, 196,  
     197, 198, 200, 203,  
 Eaton, Gov. of R. Id. 100,  
 Edsall, Annetje, 55,  
     Benjamin, 56,  
     Elizabeth, 56,  
     Johanna, 56,  
     Johannes, 56,  
     Judith, 25, 55,  
     Mary, 56,  
     Richard, 56,  
     Ruth, 56,  
     Samuel, 24, 28, 55, 56,  
     Sarah, 56,

- Ellas, Catalyntie, 207,  
 Estabrook, Abigail, 195, 196, 205,  
 Eel River, Mass., 18,  
 Eckley, Rev. Joseph, 15, 78,  
 Eckerzen, Elizabeth, 206,  
 Eisenach, Germany, 3,  
 Elbertsen, Gyspert, 34, 206,  
 Eldridge, Kezia, 47,  
     Mr. ———, 97,  
 Eliot, Me., 110,  
 Eliot, Andrew, 13,  
     John, 198,  
     Simon, 14,  
 Elizabeth Town, N. J., 55, 156, 177, 196,  
 Ellis, Bennet (Bennett), 58,  
     Elizabeth, 58, 60, 61,  
     John, 58, 65,  
     Matthias, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65,  
 Endicott, Gov. John, 149,  
 Enede, (Duck), 38,  
 English Army Officers, 5,  
 Equitable Trust Co. Building, N. Y., 5,
- Fain, Ch. 94,  
 Fairfield, Me., 12,  
 Fallowell, Martha, 53,  
 Falmouth, Mass., 47,  
 Farmer, first in Canada, 84,  
 Farmer, Sarah Mary, 204,  
 Fayrefield (Fairfield), Conn., 157,  
 Fenn, Benjamin, 154, 175,  
     Mr. ———, 152,  
 Fleet Prison, London, 37,  
 Fleming, John B., 88,  
 Fletcher, Gov. Benjamin, 171, 183,  
 Freeman, Alice, 65, 75,  
     Apphia, 70, 73, 74, 75,  
     Barn, 11,  
     Benjamin, 112,  
     Bennet, 68, 204,  
     Christian, 69,  
     Constant, 75, 204,  
     Cyrenius, 16,  
     Daniel, 69,  
     Ebenezer, 67, 68,  
     Edmund (Edmond) 42, 43, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63,  
                             64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 71, 72, 108,  
                             111,

- Freeman, Edward, 75,  
     Edward Perry, 60,  
     Elizabeth, 65, 67, 69, 75, 110, 111,  
     Elizabeth Ellis, 60,  
     Experience, 67, 69,  
     Hannah, 12, 67, 69, 75, 111,  
     Henry, 73, 74,  
     Isaac, 67, 68,  
     James, 70, 198, 203,  
     Jane, 197,  
     John, 58, 60, 61, 65, 66, 67, 71, 72, 108,  
     Joseph, 69,  
     Margaret, 61,  
     Mary, 65, 67, 68, 71, 75, 108, 126, 127, 128,  
     Mercy, 66, 67, 69, 75,  
     Nathaniel, 67, 68,  
     Patience, 67,  
     Prince, 67,  
     Priscilla, 10, 11, 12,  
     Rachel, 68, 69,  
     Rebecca, 67,  
     Ruth, 67, 68,  
     Samuel, 67, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 108, 111, 139,  
     Sarah, 67, 68, 69, 112,  
     Thankful, 67, 69,  
     Thomas, 67,  
     William, 14, 59, 67, 68, 70,  
 Freemen on Cape Cod, (qualifications), 120,  
 Frey, Anthony, 126,  
 Fry, Mr. ———, 4,  
 Fief of St. Charles, Quebec, 84,  
 Finney, Heman, 16,  
 Fish, Jonathan, 66,  
     John, 59, 60,  
     Nathaniel, 104,  
     Stuyvesant, 8,  
 Fisher's Island, Mass., 164,  
 First American built ship to show National Flag, 111,  
     Boy born in Yarmouth, Mass., 117,  
     Girl born in Yarmouth, Mass., 117,  
     Cranberries in Flax Pond, 119,  
     Marriage in Canada, 85, 114,  
     Provincial Assembly in N. J., 177,  
     Public House in New York, 28,  
     Salute to National Flag, U. S. A., 111,  
     Secular Teacher in Canada, 115,  
     Two French Women in America, 83, 114,  
 "Flipdog," 153,

- Foles, William, 139,  
 Forks,—use in England and America, 118,  
 Fort Stanwick, 4,  
     Wayne, 92,  
 Fowler, Hannah, 153,  
     Susannah, 153,  
     William, 153,  
 Frost, Joseph, 104,  
     Samuel, 104,  
 Fulton Street, N. Y., 87,  
  
 Gage, Gen'l. ———, 91,  
 Gagnon, Marthe, 50, 76, 82,  
     Mathurin, 76,  
     Pierre, 76,  
 Gallop, Capt. ———, 181,  
 Garnaud, Barbe, 137,  
 Garnault, Louis, 137,  
 Gatien, Jean Baptiste, 21,  
 Gaylard, (Gaylaud, Gaylord), Alice, 77, 148,  
     George, 148.  
     Hugh, 77, 148,  
     Johane, 148,  
     John, 148.  
     Nicholas, 148,  
  
 Gladwin, Col. ———, 4, 92,  
 Granary Burying Ground, Boston, 14,  
 Grant, Capt. ———, 91,  
 Grape Vines, to Canada from France, 84,  
 Graves, Carolina Adelaide, 79,  
     Edward Attwood, 78,  
     Johanna Barbara Catherine Carolina, 78,  
     John, 55,  
     John Boonen, 15, 78, 103,  
     Louisa Elizabeth, 78,  
     Ludivucus Marius, 78,  
     Mary, 79,  
     Matina de Nos, 78,  
     Nathaniel Marius, 79,  
     Sarah Ann, 78, 103,  
     William Lodewyk, 78,  
 Gravesend, Eng., 59,  
 Grave Stones, used in England, 122,  
 Gray, Edward, 13, 14,  
     John, 14, 97,  
     Mr. ———, 42,  
     Rachel, 68,  
     Thomas, 69,

- Gelder, (See also Van Gelder) Abraham, 207,  
 Cornelia, 207,  
 Elizabeth, 207,  
 Emereus, 207,  
 Hermanus, 207,  
 Hester, 207,  
 Johannes, 207,  
 Maria, 207,  
 William, 207,
- General Hospital, Quebec, 84,  
 Gerstungen, Ger. 3,  
 Greenleaf, Mrs. ———, 203,  
 Greenwich, Conn., 157, 183,  
 Gibbs, Thomas, 64,  
 Giffard, Robert, 29, 80, 96,  
 Gifford, Elizabeth, 45,  
     John, 46,  
 Gilbert, Mr. ———, 152,  
 Giroust, Thomas, 29,  
 Godeau, Françoise, 76,  
 Godet, Jacques, 22,  
 Godfrey, Lydia, 67,  
     Thomas, 67,  
 Goffe, Judge ———, 152, 192,  
 Gold, Maj. Nathan, 183,  
 Gonville, Eng., 104,  
 Goodman, John, 53,  
 Goodwin, Elizabeth, 39,  
     Historian, 153, 173,  
     William, 39,  
 Goodspeed, Ebenezer, 46,  
 Gorham, John, 181,  
 Gourot, Guillaume, 81,  
 Groot Schermer, Holland, 34,  
 Gross, Experience, 68,  
     Mary, 140,  
     Thomas, 67, 69,  
 Groton, Mass., 104, 196,  
 Guilford, Conn., 176,  
 Gude, Mr. ———, 93,  
 Guernsey, Eng., 116,  
 Gun, Deacon ———, 175,  
 Gunpowder, 40,000 lbs. Sold, 92,  
 Gunpowder Plot in England, 165,  
 Guyon, France, 76,  
 Guyon, (See also Du Buisson) Ann, 82,  
     Barbe, 80,  
     Catherine Gertrude, 81,

- Guyon, (See also Du Buisson) Charles, 82,  
 Claude, 80,  
 Dennis, 80,  
 Elizabeth, 82,  
 Francois, 81,  
 Guillaume, 81,  
 Genevieve, 50, 81,  
 Jean, 36, 80, 81, 113,  
 Joseph, 81,  
 Louis, 29,  
 Marie, 80, 81,  
 Marie Madeleine, 81,  
 Michael, 81,  
 Nicolas, 81,  
 Pierre, 82,  
 Simon, 80,  
 Traveois Xavier, 81,
- Hackensack, N. J., 48,  
 Hackensack Indians, 176,  
 Hackwell, Capt. ———, 58,  
 Haddon, Eng., 37,  
 Hadley, Mass., 39, 160, 179, 180,  
 Hahn (See also Hann and Hone) Catherine, 86,  
 Johannes, 27, 86, 95,  
 Johann Philip, 86,  
 Magdalena, 27, 86,
- Halifax, Nova Scotia, 13, 14,  
 Hall, Bethsheba, 47,  
     Gresham, 19,  
     Margery, 47,  
 Hallett, Elizabeth, 47,  
 Hamblen, Eleazer, 134,  
 Hamilton, Gov. Detroit, 5,  
     Duke of, 165,  
 Hann (See also Hahn and Hone) Magdalena, 211,  
 Hanover Street, Boston, 14,  
 Harlean Mss., 38,  
 Hartford, Conn., 39, 100, 154, 162, 168, 169, 175, 179, 180, 186,  
     187, 188, 189, 190, 191,  
 Harwich, Mass., 12, 16, 66, 68, 69, 112, 122, 129, 131, 132, 135,  
     197, 200,
- Havre de Grace, France, 83,  
 Hay, Lieut. ———, 92,  
 Hayot, Adrien, 81,  
 Hayward, Mehitable, 54,  
 Haywood, Hannah, 88, 90,  
     Henry, 88,

- Hazard, Anne, 89,  
     Historian, 99,  
 Hébert, Anne, 84, 85, 114,  
     Guillaume, 84, 85, 114,  
     Guillemette, 36, 84, 85, 114,  
     Louis, 83, 84, 85, 113, 114,  
 Hedouin, Charles, 50,  
 Hempstead Harbor, L. I., 100,  
 Herzen, Hendrick, 107 (See Oby)  
 Herbert, Elizabeth, 38,  
     John, 39,  
     Mary, 39,  
     William, 38,  
 Hicks, Lydia, 18, 19,  
     Robert, 18,  
 Higgins, Benjamin, 19, 68,  
     Isaac, 204,  
     Joseph, 111,  
     Lydia, 204,  
     Mercy, 204,  
     Sarah, 68,  
 Hinckley, Mary, 68,  
     Samuel, 67, 68,  
     Thomas, 65,  
 His Majesty's Hospital, Detroit, 3,  
 Hoadley, Mr. ———, 188,  
 Hobart, Nehemiah, 203,  
 Hochstraper (or Hochstrager) Jacob, 87,  
 Hollingsworth, Elizabeth, 149, 196,  
 Hollister, Historian, 150, 173, 192,  
 Holman, Mary Lovering, 17,  
 Homer, Benjamin, 47,  
 Honan, Daniel, 25,  
 Hone (Hahn, Hann), Ann, 90,  
     Benjamin, 87,  
     Catherine, 86, 90,  
     Edward, 90,  
     Esther, 87,  
     Elizabeth, 89,  
     George Washington, 90,  
     Henrietta, 7,  
     Henry, 88, 90,  
     Henry Will, 87,  
     Isaac, 88, 89,  
     Joanna, 89,  
     Joanna Esther, 90,  
     Johannes, 27, 86, 95,  
     Johann Philip, 86,

Hone (Hahn, Hann), Judith, 6, 7, 87, 89,  
 Julia, 87,  
 John, 6, 87, 88, 89, 145, 146,  
 Magdalena, 27, 86, 87,  
 Philip, 32, 86, 87, 88, 89,  
 Samuel, 87, 90,  
 William, 90,

Hone & Fleming, 88,  
 Hone, John & Sons, 88, 89,  
 Honfleur, France, 84, 114,  
 Hopkins, Elkanah, 14,  
     Samuel, 16,  
 Hore, Richard, 43,  
 Horsmonden, Eng., 130, 212,  
 Hotchkiss, Theresa, 7,  
 Houghton, Rev. Geo., 14, 7,  
 House, "Palisade Style," 117,  
 Howe, Historian, 178,  
 Howes, Jeremiah, 72, 108,  
     Joseph, 99,  
     Mr. ———, 72,  
     Samuel, 133,  
     Thomas, 19, 40, 41, 42, 43,  
 Howland, Arthur, Jr., 108,  
     Samuel Shaw, 90,  
 Hubert, Jacques, 20,  
 Hubon, Guillaume, 85, 114,  
 Huismans, Sarah, 48,  
 Huron Interpreter, 92,  
 Hutchinson, Gov. of Mass., 57,  
 Huyghs, Sir, 102,  
 Hyer, Col. ———, 145,  
     Neeltye, 145,

Illinois Country, 4,  
 Immersion in Baptism, 212,  
 Index of U. S. Reports, Anthon's, 6,  
 Indian Worship in Mass., 199, 200,  
 Ingoldsby, Maj. ———, 24,  
 Isabella, Belgian Arch Duchess, 141,  
 Island of Orleans, 36,  
 Isle of Man, Eng., 18,

Jadot (Jadeau), Father, 22,  
     Genevieve, 4, 5, 6, 23, 81, 92, 94,  
     Jacques, 91, 92, 93,  
     Louis, 4, 22, 23, 91, 92, 93, 94,

- Jamaica, L. I., 52,  
 Jans, Anneke, 143,  
     Marretje, 107,  
 Janszen, William, 107,  
 Jean II, of Holland, 102,  
 Jeffries, Walter Lloyd, 110,  
 Jennings, William, 39,  
 Jersey, Eng., 116,  
 John of Barneveldt (See Stoutenburgh)  
 Johnson, Thomas, 177,  
     Sir William, 4, 91,  
 Jones, Capt. John Paul, 111,  
     William, 154,  
 Jonquest, Etienne, 85, 114,  
 Judge Advocate, N. Y., (Anthon) 6, 7,  
  
 Kane, Marie Antoinette, 89,  
 Kemble, Mr. ———, 38,  
 Kempton (Compton) Manasseth, 196, 197,  
 Kent, Eliza, 89,  
 Ketcham, Kezia, 56,  
 Kieft, Gov. of New Amsterdam, 142,  
 King Charles II, 152, 164, 166, 174,  
     James II, 163, 164, 166, 170, 184,  
     Jean II, of Holland, 102,  
     of France, 114,  
     Philip (Am. Indian), 158, 161, 163, 178, 180,  
     William (Eng.) 24, 171,  
     William I (Holland), 103, 191,  
 King Philip's War, 8, 139, 158, 178,  
 Kingsland, Mr. ———, 207,  
 Kip, Jacob, 143,  
     Jacobus, 25,  
     Jesse, 25,  
     John, 49,  
 Kirk, Louis, 81,  
 Kirkes of Quebec, 36,  
 Kirkland, Martha, 25,  
 Kittery, Me., 110,  
 Klotzen (Klotz) Magdalena, 27, 86, 95,  
 Knott, Martha, 53,  
 Knowles, Apphia, 8,  
     John, 19, 135, 197,  
     Joshua, 11,  
     Mary, 67,  
     Mr. ———, 111,  
     Phebe, 12,

- Knowles, Samuel, 67,  
     Seth, 197,  
     Williard, 11,  
 Kyrkland, Ebenezer, 52,
- Labutte, Sir ———, 22,  
 La Cleff, Commissary, 92,  
 La Maire (Le Mère) Nicoll, 29, 96,  
 La Marche, Jean, 20,  
 La Montagne, John, 49,  
 La Rochelle, France, 32, 83, 106, 137,  
 L'Ange-gardien, Can., 82, 137,  
 Leclerc, Francoise, 20,  
 Le Febvre, Jacques, 20,  
 Le Fort, Antoine, 50,  
 Le Mère (See La Maire)  
 Le Pelle, Marie Charles, 21,  
 Le Tardif, Oliver, 36,  
 Lakemead, Eng., 148,  
 Lambert, Historian, 150, 153, 193,  
 Langy, France, 29,  
 Larkin, Mary, 204,  
 Lattimer, Rebecca, 149,  
 Laurenszen, Zacharius, 206,  
 Laval University, 84,  
 Law, Gov. ———, 173,  
 Law Institute, N. Y., 6,  
 Lawes, Mr. ———, 175,  
 Lawrence, William, 55,  
 Llangattock, Eng., 38,  
 Llanherne, Wales, 37,  
 Lechdale, Eng., 31, 108,  
 Leete, Gov., William, 152, 154, 163, 174,  
 Leisler, Jacob, 24, 55, 207,  
     Mary, 56,  
 Leisler's Council, 24, 55,  
 Lesot, Jacques Francois, 50, 76,  
 Lesperance, Mr. ———, 92,  
 Lespiney Property, Quebec, 84,  
 Leusden, John, 198,  
 Leverich, Rev. William, 99, 100,  
 Leyden, Holland, 30, 31, 53, 138, 214,  
 Life in Colonial Massachusetts, 118, 119, 120, 122,  
 Little Queen Street, N. Y. 48,  
 Lizard, Catrina, 143,  
     Widow ———, 143,  
 London, Eng., 14, 18, 32, 37, 59, 89, 138,

- Lothrop, Barnabas, 134,  
 Capt. ———, 179,  
 Freeman H. 133, 134,  
 Rev. John, 99, 100,  
 Lottery Prize won by Jno. B. Fleming, 88,  
 Louisberg, Nova Scotia, 13,  
 Louvain, Belg. 102,  
 Lower, "Anglo-Saxon Names", 38,  
 Lucke, Anjou, France, 20,  
 Lumpkin, Hannah, 97,  
     Tamsen, 196,  
     Thomasine, 97, 100,  
     William, 97, 100,  
 Luther, Martin, 5,  
 Lying-in-Hospital, N. Y., 5,  
 Lynch, Dominick, 88,  
 Lynn, Mass., 57,  
 Lyon, Mary, 204,
- McVickar, John, 89,  
 Macard, Nicholas, 36,  
 Mackintosh, Angus, 4,  
 Madeira Wine, Anthon's, 4,  
 Maddock (Maddock) Johanna, 98, 210,  
 Malcolm, Col. William, 145,  
 Manamoy, Mass., 129, 131,  
 Manners, Sir George, 37,  
     Grace, 37,  
     John, 37,  
     Mary, 37,  
 Marblehead, Mass., 116, 124, 129, 140,  
 Marschalk, Andries, 207,  
 Marshall, Capt. ———, 181,  
 Marsolet, Genevieve, 81,  
     Madeleine, 81,  
 Marshfield, Mass., 39, 104,  
 Martin, Painter, 5,  
 Mashantumpaine, Indina Chief, 40,  
 Maskop, Anna Elizabeth, 28,  
 Mason, Capt. ———, 181, 182,  
 Massachusetts Navy, in Revolution, 111,  
 Massacre at Pavonia, N. J. 209,  
 Maurice of Nassau, 141, 206,  
 Mather, Increase, 198, 199, 204,  
     Rev. John Cotton, 57, 198, 200, 204,  
     Samuel, 173, 194, 195,  
 Mathews, Rev. James M. 90,

- Matthews, Esther (Hester) 213,  
     James, 213,  
     Samuel, 47,  
     Sarah, 47,  
 Mattacheset (Yarmouth), Mass., 40,  
 Maxwell, Hugh, 88,  
 "Mayflower", 30, 31, 53,  
 Mayo, Elizabeth (Betty) 99, 101, 140, 195, 196, 204,  
     Hannah, 67, 99, 101,  
     John, 67, 99,  
     Joseph, 10,  
     Mary, 19, 100,  
     Nathaniel, 99, 101, 108,  
     Phebe, 10,  
     Samuel, 67, 68, 97, 99, 100, 196,  
     Sarah, 67, 68, 101, 111,  
     Tamosin (Tamsin), 99, 196,  
     Thomasine, 100,  
 Meert (de Meerte), Godefroid, 102,  
     Joseph Michael, 78, 102,  
     Maria Theresa, 103,  
     Mathias, 102,  
     Sarah (Sally) Atwood, 7, 103,  
 Merrick, John, 135,  
     Mr. ———, 75,  
     Nathaniel, 75,  
     Ruth, 67, 68,  
     Sarah, 67,  
     Stephen, 19,  
     William, 67, 68,  
 Merwin, Elizabeth, 195,  
 Middle Street, Boston, Mass. 14,  
 Milbourne, (Milborne) Son-in-law of Jacob Leisler, 25, 56,  
 Milford, Conn., 147, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 156, 157, 162, 172,  
     173, 175, 176, 177, 178, 191, 192, 193, 194, 196,  
 Mill Bridge, Boston, Mass. 14,  
 Miller, Elizabeth, 104,  
     Faith, 104,  
     Hannah, 104,  
     John, 46, 104,  
     Lydia, 104,  
     Mehitable, 46, 104,  
     Susanna, 104,  
 Mills Building, N Y. 5,  
 Mispat Kill (Maspeth), L. I. 143, 206,  
 "Mister", Title as used in Colonial times, 123, 177, 192,

- Montenack, Frans, 105,  
     Maryntia, 105,  
     Tanneken, 105, 207,  
 Montreal, Canada, 20,  
 Moore, Naomy, 56,  
     Samuel, 56,  
 Morgan, J. P. Sr. 5,  
     Gov. E. D. 7,  
 More, Richard, 31,  
 Moreau, Francois, 50,  
 Morebread, Joane, 130, 212,  
 Morin, Capt. ———, 84,  
 Mortagne, France, 80, 81, 96, 113,  
 Morton, George, 138,  
     Mercy, 53,  
     Nathaniel, 53,  
 Mosely, Capt. ———, 179, 182,  
 Muddy Brook, Mass., 179,  
 Myrick, Joseph, 111,
- Names, Derivation of, 38, 44, 58,  
 Napoleon's Army, 102,  
 Narragansett Indians, 161, 181,  
 National Flag, First Shown on Am. Built Ship, 111,  
     First Salute to, 111,  
 Nauset, (Eastham), Mass. 18, (See Eastham)  
 Navarre (de Navarre), Mariana, 4, 22, 92,  
     Marie Anne, 22, 23,  
     Robert, 4, 22,  
 Nepoytam, Indian Chief, 121,  
 Nesle, Capt. ———, 80, 113,  
 New Amsterdam (See New York)  
 Newark, Eng., 177,  
 Newark, N. J.—Founded by Robt. Treat in 1666, p. 156,  
 Newark, N. J. 55, 156, 157, 172, 173, 175, 176, 178,  
 New Castle, Eng., 107 195 196,  
 Newbury, Mass., 4, 15,  
 New Haven, Conn., 24, 149, 150, 151, 152, 154, 155, 156, 157, 172,  
     173, 174, 175, 176, 178, 183, 190, 193,  
 New London, Conn., 162, 181, 182,  
 Newman, Gov. of Conn., 152,  
 New Netherlands,—inducements to settle therein, 175,  
 New Oxford, Mass., 62,  
 New Rochelle, N. Y. 5,  
 Newton, Roger, 151,  
 Newtown, L. I., 55,  
 New Utrecht, 207,

- New York, N. Y. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 32, 55, 142, 143, 155, 157, 166, 207,  
 Lying-in-Hospital, 5,  
 Law Institute, 6,  
 Supreme Court, 6,  
 Nicolet, Jean, 36,  
 Nicolls, Gov. of N. Y., 24,  
 Nisbet's Heraldry, 38,  
 Nicharson, William, 122,  
 Nickerson, Mary, 140,  
 Nicholas, 121, 129,  
 Nickersone, William, 43,  
 Nobscusset, Mass., 10, 42, 46, 47, 134,  
 Northampton, Mass., 163, 179, 180,  
 North Dennis (Yarmouth), Mass., 39, 44, 47, 72, (see Yarmouth)  
 North Eastern R. R., 88,  
 Northfield, Mass., 179, 180,  
 Norwalk, Conn., 157,  
 Norwich, Conn., 19, 160, 180, 182,  
 Nye, Nathan, 59, 60,
- Oath of Allegiance, 107,  
 Old, Amos, 37,  
 Oldham, Lucretia, 31,  
 Old South Church, Boston, 15, 200,  
 Oswald, Philip Jacob, 86,  
 Ogden, John, 156, 177,  
 Oby, Denmark, 107,  
 Obbe, (Obe or Obee) Grietie (Margaret) 107,  
 Hendrick, 48,  
 Hendrick Hendrickszen, 107,  
 Lydia, 107,  
 Lyspeth, 48,
- Orleans, Mass., 12, 197, 204,  
 Otis, Amos, 37,  
 Oyster Bay, L. I. 99, 100, 142,
- Padduck (Paddock), Deborah, 125,  
 Ichabod, 122, 126, 127,  
 Mary, 124,  
 Robert, 124,  
 Zachary, 122, 124, 125, 126, 131, 133.
- Paddy, Thomas, 60,  
 William, 59, 65,  
 Paine, Bennit, 204,  
 John, 67, 68, 204,  
 Joshua, 14,  
 Josiah, 197,

- Paine, Lois, 68,  
     Patience, 67,  
     Robert Treat, 201, 203,  
     Ruth, 12,  
     Samuel, 14, 15, 67,  
     Samuel Treat, 173,  
     Thomas, 205,  
 "Palatine"—J. Hahn, 86,  
 "Palisade House", 117,  
 Palmer, William, 41, 43, 122,  
 Paradis, Pierre, 80,  
 Parke, Richard, 31,  
 Parkman's "Conspiracy of Pontiac", 22,  
 Paugasset (Derby), Conn., 151,  
 Pavonia, N. J. 209,  
 Pawkunawkut Indians, 40,  
 Pays d'Aunis, France, 50,  
 Pratt, Benajah, 53,  
     Historian, 196,  
 Peacham, English Heraldist, 38,  
 Peck, Jeremiah, 196,  
 Peckina, Marie, 81,  
 Pepper, Isaac, 9, 67, 69, 75,  
 Perel (Pearl) Street, N. Y. 28, 55, 87, 88, 209,  
 Perrot, Michael, 21,  
 Perry, Arthur, 46,  
     Edward, 60, 61, 65,  
     Elizabeth, 68,  
     Margaret, 65,  
     Mary, 61,  
 Pettyquamscott (Pettisquanscot), R. I. 161, 181,  
 Plymouth, Eng., 24, 55,  
 Plymouth Colony, 8, 18, 30, 31, 39, 46, 53, 57, 59, 61, 62, 67, 74,  
     108, 116, 120, 126, 129, 138, 158, 161, 162,  
     181, 185, 198, 200, 204,  
     Division of Cattle, 8, 18,  
     Eel River, 18,  
     First Child Born, 53,  
 Prence, Elizabeth, 108,  
     Gov. 66, 71, 72, 73, 74,  
     Hannah, 99, 108,  
     Jane, 108, 134,  
     Judith, 108,  
     Mary, 72, 73, 108,  
     Mercy, 65, 72, 108,  
     Mr. ———, 197,  
     Rebecca, 65, 71, 72, 108,  
     Sarah, 72, 108,

- Prence, Susanna, 108,  
     Thomas, 31, 35, 108,  
 Prescott, Col. ———, 190,  
 Piaud, Jeanne, 32,  
     Judith, 32, 106,  
 Picard, Francois, 21,  
 Pierce, Hugh, 86,  
 Pierrepont, Grace, 37,  
     Sir Henry, 37,  
 Pike, Martha, 10,  
 Pilgrim Church at Scrooby, Eng., 30,  
 Pitkin, William, 183,  
 Pitminster, Eng., 77, 148, 149,  
 Philadelphia, Pa., 86,  
 Philippau, Catherine, 137,  
     Charles, 115, 136, 137,  
 Phillips, Martha, 13,  
 Phyn, Ellice & English, 89,  
 Poisson, Francois, 20,  
 Pond, Nathan G., 153,  
 Pontiac, Conspiracy of, 22, 91,  
     Indian Chief, 5, 91, 92,  
     Siege of, 3,  
 Popham, John, 52,  
 Port Royal, Nova Scotia, 83, 114,  
 Portier, Mr. ———, 93,  
 Port au Prince, Hayti, 3,  
 Posquier, Marie, 36,  
 Potier, P. 94,  
 Potter, Ralph, 206,  
 Poundisford, Eng., 148,  
 Poutrincourt, M., 83, 114,  
 Powell, Elizabeth, 149,  
     Michael, 149,  
 Procureur du Roi, 84,  
 Profaneness, 182,  
 Providence, R. Id., 12,  
 Provincetown, Mass., 16,  
 Prudden, Rev. ———, 150, 151,  
 Public House, First in New York, 28, 55,  
 Putnam, Col. ———, 190,  
 Pynchon, Maj. ———, 179, 180,  
  
 Quakers, 57, 59, 61, 121,  
 Quarantine Riot, Staten Id., 7,  
 Quebec, Canada, 4, 21, 29, 36, 50, 76, 80, 81, 84, 85, 96, 113,  
     114, 115, 136, 137,

- Queen Elizabeth, 30, 122,  
     Mary, 24, 171,  
 Querean, Hannah, 87,  
 Quivet Neck, Mass., 116,  
  
 Racine, Louisa, 80,  
 Randall, John, 61,  
 Randolph, Edwin, 166, 167, 168,  
     Edward, 185,  
 Reading, Eng., 55,  
 Recollet, Mre. ———, 22, 85, 93,  
 Regiment, 69th, Royal Americans, 3,  
 Reimie, Lord of Groenwald, 141,  
 Reims, France, 92,  
 Remich, Luxemburg, 110,  
 Remick (or Remich) Abraham, 68, 75, 110, 111,  
     Benjamin, 111,  
     Christian, 12, 69, 75, 110, 111, 112,  
     Daniel, 112,  
     David, 111,  
     Elizabeth, 75, 111, 112,  
     Hannah, 12, 68, 110, 112,  
     Isaac, 110, 112,  
     Jacob, 110, 111,  
     Joseph, 112,  
     Joshua, 110, 112,  
     Lydia, 110,  
     Martha, 110,  
     Mary, 110,  
     Mercy, 75, 111, 112,  
     Sarah, 12, 15, 78, 110, 112,  
     Timothy, 111,  
 Rensselaerburgh, N. Y., 87,  
 Revolution of 1688 (England), 170,  
 Reycroft, Hannah, 99,  
 Rich, John, 204,  
 Richard, Giles, 53,  
 Rider, Lydia, 39,  
     Samuel, 39,  
     Zachary, 117,  
 Ridding, Eng., 28,  
 Ringo, Albertus, 143,  
 Ryckman, Tobias, 49,  
 Ryder, Hannah, 47,  
     John, 47,  
 Rye, N. Y., 157, 165, 183, 184,  
 Ryegate, Eng., 59,

- Robinson, Rev. John, 138,  
     Joseph, 144,  
 Robbin, Mathurine, 80, 113,  
 Roberts, Robert, 49,  
 Rochelle, France (See La Rochelle)  
 Rocrois, France,  
 Roelofs, Sir, 102,  
     Tryntie, 143,  
 Rogers, Prudence, 10,  
     Sarah, 197,  
     Thomas, 204,  
 Roland, Marie Anne, 92, 93,  
 Rollet, Marie, 84, 85, 114,  
 Rolls in Tower of London, Year 1254, p. 37,  
 Roman Occupation, Luxemburg, 110,  
 Rombouts, Francis, 28,  
 Rondeau, Jacques, 20,  
 Room, Pieter Willemzen, 207,  
 Roomen (Rooman) Geertruyd, 48, (See also Will)  
     William Janse, 211,  
 Rome, Italy, 88,  
 Roos, Aefje, 207,  
     Gerrit Jansen, 207,  
 Rotterdam, Holland, 86,  
 Rouse, Anne, 37,  
     William, 37,  
 Rowley, Mass., 104,  
 Roxbury, Mass., 104,  
 Royer, Renee, 76,  
 Rhode Island Boundary, 164,  
 Russell, William S., 59, 60, 62, 65,  
  
 St. Baudry, 20,  
 St. Charles, Fief of, 84,  
 St. Christophers, W. Ind., 52, 210,  
 Ste. Croix, Canada, 83,  
 St. Etienne de Beaumont, 36,  
 St. John's Park, N. Y., 88,  
 St. Martin (See Baudry and Des Buttes), Anthony, 4,  
     Archange, 4,  
     Catherine, 115, 137,  
     Finon, 4,  
     Jacques, 4, 22, 92, 93,  
     Jean, 21, 22, 92,  
     Marguerite, 4, 92, 93,  
     Mariana, 4,  
     Marie, 115,

- St. Martin (See Baudry and Des Buttes), Marie Marguerite, 4,  
92, 93,  
Martin, 115, 136,  
Michel, 136,
- Sackville, Ann, 37,  
John, 37,
- Saintes, France, 115,
- Salem, Mass., 40, 70, 116,
- Salt, by Solar Evaporation, 119,
- Salzungen, Ger., 3,
- Sandwich, Mass., 43, 46, 57, 58, 59, 61, 62, 65, 66, 70, 99, 104, 198,
- Sandys, Archbishop, 30,
- Sasuet Neck, Mass., 42, 125, (See Sesuit)
- Savage, Historian, 153,
- Saxe Meiningen, Ger., 3,
- Saybrook, Conn., 157, 163,
- Schaexer, P., 52,
- Sharp, Jacob, 27,
- Shaw, Jonathan, 53,
- Skauton Neck, Sandwich, Mass., 66,
- Slaves, 2500 Owned, 88,
- Smalecrosse, Eng., 148,  
"Smalerest," 148,
- Sparrow, Elizabeth, 75,  
John, 67,  
Jonathan, 67, 99, 108,  
Lydia, 67,  
Rebecca, 67,  
Sarah, 68,
- Stagg, Annake, 145,  
John, 145,
- Staire, Mr. ———, 43,
- Stamford, Conn., 157, 183,
- Standish, Miles, 42, 43, 46,
- Stanly, Nathaniel, 189,
- Staplegrove, Eng., 148,
- Staten Island, N. Y., 27, 48,
- Swaine, Samuel, 177,
- Sears (Sares, Sarres, Saeres, Serres, Seeres)  
Ann, 135,  
Bethia, 10, 46, 47, 134,  
Daniel, 129, 131, 132, 135,  
David, 123,  
Deborah, 117, 122, 123, 124, 129, 132,  
Dorothy, 122, 126, 128,  
Elkanah, 119,  
Jonathan, 16,

- Sears (Sares, Sarres, Saeres, Serres, Seeres)  
 John, 10, 117, 119, 129, 132, 135,  
 John Bouchier, 124,  
 Joseph, 131,  
 Josiah, 132,  
 Lydia, 134,  
 Margery, 135,  
 Mary, 8, 135, 204,  
 Mercy, 134,  
 Paul, 46, 116, 119, 122, 123, 124, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130,  
 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 212,  
 Rhoda, 12,  
 Richard, 116, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128,  
 129, 131, 132, 135,  
 Samuel, 129, 131, 132, 134,  
 Silas, 119, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126,  
 Secretary of State to Queen Elizabeth, 30,  
 Seely, Capt. ———, 181,  
 Seminary of Quebec, 84,  
 Senckhican's Island, Del., 55,  
 Sermons of Rev. Samuel Treat, 201,  
 Sesuit, Mass., 120, 122 (See Sasuet),  
 "Seven Pillars," 147, 153,  
 Sewall's Diary, 203,  
 Seward, Sarah Mary, 204,  
 Sherman, Abigail, 196,  
 Mary, 73,  
 Sleends, Patrician of Brussels, 102,  
 Stead, William, 52,  
 Stearns, Hannah, 73,  
 Rev. ———, 178,  
 Steenweg, Patrician of Brussels, 102,  
 Stevens, Abigail, 10, 11, 12, 140, 197,  
 Joanna, 140,  
 John, 140,  
 Jerusha, 140,  
 Levi, 140,  
 Mary, 140,  
 Richard, 11, 140, 204,  
 Street, Mary, 204,  
 Sweertz, Patrician of Brussels, 102,  
 Siege of Boston, 15,  
 Pontiac, 3,  
 Simpkins, Nicolas, 40,  
 Scituate, Mass., 54, 124, 130, 212,  
 Ship, Abigail, 58,  
 Ann, 31,  
 Anne, 18,

- Ship. Betsey, 14  
     Desire, 13, 14,  
     Desire of Barnstable, 100,  
     Fortune, 108,  
     Mary Jane, 35,  
     Mayflower, 30, 31, 53, 138,  
     Nancy, 14,  
     Polly, 13,  
     Ranger, 111,  
     Sally, 13, 14,  
     Samuel, 86,  
     Speedwell, 138,  
     Swallow, 14,  
     Tryall, 55,  
     Vrouw Anna, 3,  
 Smith, Bashua, 75,  
     Joanna, 140,  
 Springfield, Mass., 159, 160, 180,  
 Stile, Corneliszen, 34,  
 Stiles, President ———, 189,  
 Stridcastel, Belgium, 102,  
 Swift, Historian, 123,  
     William, 64,  
 Socketts, Kent, Eng., 37,  
 Somerby, H. C., 121,  
 Somes, Nathaniel, 14,  
 Soulage, Catherine, 115, 136,  
     Marie, 136,  
 Soulard, Anonyme, 137,  
     Jean, 115, 136, 137;  
     Jean Baptiste, 137,  
     Jean Joseph, 137,  
     Jeanne, 137,  
     Jeanne Genevieve, 137,  
     Marguerite Catharine, 137,  
     Marie Jeanne, 20, 21,  
     Martin, 137,  
 South Berwick, Me. 110,  
 South Carolina, 78,  
 South Church, Boston, Mass., 15, 200,  
 Soumain, Simon, 32,  
 Southold, Mass., 100,  
 South Kingston, R. Id. 181,  
 South Sea (Yarmouth), Mass. 45,  
 South Trendle, Eng, 148,  
 Southworth, Alice, 74, 138, 139,  
     Constant, 33, 35, 74, 75, 138,

- Southworth, Edward, 138, 139  
 Elizabeth, 139,  
 Mary, 74, 139,  
 Mercy, 73, 74, 75, 111, 139,  
 Nathaniel, 139,  
 Priscilla, 139,  
 Thomas, 74, 133, 138,  
 William, 139,
- Scrooby, Eng, 30, 53,  
 Slot, Jan Jense, 206,  
 Sloughter, Gov. of N. Y., 24,  
 Snow, The Great, (in Mass.) 203,  
 Snow, Anna, 8,  
 Elizabeth, 198,  
 Jabez, 198, 204,  
 Jane, 134,  
 Jonathan, 67, 69,  
 Mark, 8, 108, 134,  
 Thankful, 68,  
 Thomas, 134,
- Stock Exchange, N. Y. 5,  
 Stocking, Rev. ———, 138,  
 Stoutenburgh, Aefje, 143,  
 Ann, 146,  
 Annake, 144, 145,  
 Cornelia, 144, 145,  
 Elizabeth, 145, 146,  
 Enjeltie, 142,  
 Eva, 142, 144, 145,  
 Gysbert, 144,  
 Hanna, 144,  
 Isaac, 27, 48, 143, 144, 145, 206, 211,  
 Jannetje, 143,  
 Jacobus, 144,  
 Johan, (Jan) 141, 145, 146,  
 Johanna (Joanna), 6, 87, 89, 145, 146,  
 Lucas (Luykas), 143, 144,  
 Maria, 144,  
 Neeltje, 144, 145,  
 Philippus, 145,  
 Pieter (Peter) 141, 142, 143, 146, 209,  
 Reimie, 141,  
 Tobas, 143,  
 Willemetje, 143,  
 William, 141,  
 Wyntie, 143,

- Sullivan, Gen'l, ———, 111,  
 Sunderland, John, 97,  
 Surgeon's Mate, Geo. C. Anthon, 3.  
 Surinam, Dutch Guiana, 3,  
 Surnames,—Dixon on, 38, 44,  
 Scudder, Hannah, 19,  
 Stryker, Jennetie, 56,  
 Studley, Joseph, 47,  
 Sturgis, Bethiah, 68,  
 Stuyvesant, Gov. Peter, 142, 175,  
 Syracuse, N Y. 119,
- Taber, Philip, 41.  
 Tailhadier, Marien, 20,  
 Talcott, Gov. ———, 189,  
     Maj. John, 157, 163, 183.  
 Talon, Intendent, 84,  
 Tanguay, Abbe, 85,  
 Tapp, Edmund, 147, 151, 153,  
     Jane, 147, 149, 153, 195,  
 Taunton, Mass., 148,  
 Thacher, Anthony, 40, 41, 42, 116, 126,  
     Dorothy, 124,  
     H. C. 121,  
     John, 45, 123, 127, 133,  
     Judah, 127,  
     Mr. ———, 122, 126,  
     Peter, 133, 134,  
     Rebecca, 45,  
 Three Rivers, Canada, 20, 21, 29,  
 Tracy, John, 108,  
 Traine Band of Milford, Conn., 178,  
 Testu, Angelique, 82,  
 Teunis, Teuntie, 207,  
 Treat, (Trett, Tratt, Trott),  
     Abigail, 11, 140, 173, 193, 194, 195, 204,  
     Alice, 148, 149,  
     Andrew 194,  
     Ann 173, 195,  
     Elizabeth, 149, 198, 204,  
     Eunice, 203, 205,  
     Gov. ———, 24,  
     Hannah, 173, 194, 195,  
     Honora (Honor), 148, 149,  
     James, 149, 152,  
     Jane, 75, 173, 195, 203, 204,  
     Joanna, 148, 149,

- Treat, (Trett, Tratt, Trott),  
 John, 148, 172, 177, 178, 194, 195, 197, 204,  
 John Harvey, 205,  
 Joseph, 173, 194, 195, 197, 204,  
 Joshua, 204,  
 Katharine, 149,  
 Mary, 157, 173, 177, 194, 195, 204,  
 Nathaniel, 197, 204,  
 Richard, 77, 148, 149, 152, 174,  
 Robert, pages 147 to 196, incl., 204, 205,  
 Samuel, 101, 172, 173, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199,  
     200, 201, 204,  
 Sarah, 149, 177, 195, 204,  
 Susanna, 149,  
 William, 148,  
 Tredwell & Hone, 89,  
 Trendle, Eng., 148,  
 Trepagny, Barbe, 50,  
 Tibbals, George, 153,  
 Tichenor, Abigail, 195,  
 Ticonderoga, Capture of, 111,  
 Tienhoven, Holland, 209,  
 Tilden, Thomas, 39,  
 Tilson, Elizabeth, 54,  
     Mary, 53,  
 Tobey, Thomas, 46,  
 "Toggler", 153,  
 Tonset, (Eastham) Mass., 68,  
 Taupin, Jeanne, 81,  
 Taupain, Sieur Toussaint, 29,  
 Tourouvre, France, 76,  
 Thornton, Rev. Thomas, 121,  
 Thompson (Tomson), Alice, 149,  
     Rev. William, 149,  
 Tudor, Mr. ———, 207,  
 Turk, Maria, 144,  
 Turner, Catherine, 7,  
     William, 14,  
 Turring, Chaplain, 53rd Reg't, Detroit, 4,  
 Trumbull, Historian, 172, 188, 189, 192,  
 Truro, Mass., 10, 16, 135, 140, 197,
- Unterella, Ger. 3,  
 United Colonies Congress, 35, 152, 155, 158, 161, 163, 174,  
 University of Utrecht, 198,  
 Ursuline Nun, Marie St. Martin, 115, 136,  
 Usher, John, 110,

- Uyten Bogert (Uyttenbogart), Altje, 206,  
 Dirck, 143, 206,  
 Grietie, 206,  
 Gyspert Elbertszen, 34, 206,  
 Jacobus, 206,  
 John, 206,  
 Maria, 206,  
 Maritje, 206,  
 Neeltje, 143, 144, 206,  
 Nicolaes, 206,
- Vachon, Pierre, 137,  
 Van Benthuizen, Balthazar, 48,  
 Van Dam, Rip., 143,  
     Saratje, 144,  
 Van Derse, Jacob, 144,  
 Van Deusen, Jacobus, 206,  
 Van de Water, Cornelis, 143,  
 Van Echtsveen, William, 143,  
 Van Exween, Gerit Cornelis, 143,  
 Van Egmont, Marie L., 124,  
 Van Gelder (See also Gelder), Abraham, 207,  
     Cornelia, 48, 207,  
     Elizabeth, 105, 207,  
     Emereus, 207,  
     Hermanus, 105, 207,  
     Hester, 207,  
     Jan. 105, 207,  
     Johannes, 207,  
     Maria, 207,
- Van Inburgh, G., 25,  
 Van Loenen (See Uyten Bogert), Altje, 206,  
     Gyspert Elbertszen, 206,  
 Van Olden Barneveldt, Johan, (See Stoutenburgh)  
 Van Rollegom, Anneken, 143,  
 Van Schaick, Myndert, 89,  
 Van Stoutenburgh (See Stoutenburgh)  
 Van Sysse, Margarita, 48,  
 Van Tienhoven, Aefje, 142, 143, 209,  
     Cornelius, 142, 209,  
 Van Utrecht, Maria, 141,  
 Van Voorst, Sara, 32,  
 Varick, Margarita, 143,  
 Varick Street, N. Y., 88,  
 Vaughn, Henry, 38,  
 Vickers (Vickres, Vrickers), David, 98, 210,  
     Johanna, 26, 98, 210,  
     John, 25, 210,

- Vickery, Joanna, 204,  
 Victoria Park, Quebec, 84,  
 Vignon, N., 52,  
 Vincenore, Portier, 93,  
 Vinge, Rachel, 209,  
 Viscount Avonmore, 38,  
     Longueville, 38,  
 Vlissengen, Zeelandt, 207,  
 "Vrouw Anna," 3,
- Wabash River, 4,  
 Wadsworth, Capt. Joseph, 187, 189, 190,  
 Waite, Hon. Morrison Remich, 111,  
 Waldron, William, 142,  
 Wall Street, N. Y.,—House on, 5, 88, 89, 206,  
 Waquanchett, Mass., 60,  
 War of 1812, p. 6,  
     King Philip's, 8,  
 Watertown, Mass., 57, 70, 73,  
 Watson, Elkanah, 67,  
     Mary, 53,  
     Mercy, 67,  
 Watts, Capt. ———, 181,  
 Washington's Staff, 111,  
 Whaling on Massachusetts Coast, 119,  
 Whalley, Judge, ———, 152, 192,  
 Webber, Genalogist, 138,  
 Webster, Robert, 149,  
 Wellfleet, Mass., 197, 200,  
 Werden, Peter, 125,  
     Samuel, 128,  
 Wessells, Annetje, 28, 211,  
     Christina, 28,  
     Henrica, 28,  
     Jennetje, 55,  
     Maria, 28,  
     Metje Boonen, 55,  
     Warner, 28,  
     Wessell, 28, 55,  
 West Brewster, Mass., 66,  
 Westfield, Mass., 160, 179, 180, 181,  
 Wethersfield, Conn., 148, 150,  
 Wrentham, Eng., 33, 138,  
 Will, Christian, 211,  
     Elizabeth, 26, 145, 211,  
     Hendrick, 26, 86, 211,  
     Johannes, 26, 211,

- Will, Philip, 211,  
     William, 211,  
     William Janse, 211,  
 Willard, Abigail, 195, 196, 205,  
     Daniel, 213,  
     Deborah, 124, 129, 134, 212,  
     George, 54, 124, 129, 130, 212,  
     Joane, 130,  
     Joshua, 213,  
     Richard, 130, 212,  
     Samuel, 196, 200, 201,  
     Simon, 54, 130, 212,  
 William, Lord of Stouten Brugh, 141, 142,  
 William, Prince of Orange, 191,  
 William I of Holland, 103,  
 Williams, Katherine, 14,  
     John, 14,  
     Roger, 116,  
 Winfield, Historian, 209,  
 Wing, John, 129,  
 Windsor, Conn., 173, 194,  
 Winslow, Edward, 42,  
     Josiah, 73, 181,  
     Kenelm, 131, 133, 134,  
     Lancher, 128,  
     Nathaniel, 104,  
 Winthrop, Gov. John, 24, 70, 154, 163, 171, 174,  
     Fitz John, 171,  
 Witherell, Rev. William, 124, 129,  
 "White Back Cow," 18,  
 Whiting, Mr. ———, 184, 185, 190,  
     Rev. ———, 159,  
     William, 159,  
 Whitney, Stephen, 88,  
 Wrington, Eng., 138,  
 Wolcott, George, 149,  
     Roger, 188, 189,  
 Wood, Abigail, 8, 53, 214,  
     Stephen, 53,  
 Woodbridge, N. J., 196,  
 Woodhull, Ruth, 56,  
 Woodman, Mrs. ———, 59,  
 Wornall, Hester, 53,  
     Joseph, 53,  
 Wyllys, George, 188,  
  
 Xavier, Traveois, 81,  
 Xaintes, France, 115,

- Yarmouth (Mattacheset, Mattakeese), Mass., 10, 37, 40, 41, 45,  
 46, 68, 72, 97, 99, 100, 104, 108, 120, 121, 122, 123,  
 124, 129, 131, 134, 135, 213,  
 Division of Lands, 40, 41, 42, 43,  
 Founded by Anthony Thacher, 116,  
 Records Burned, 39, 129,  
 Yellow Fever, Epidemic, N. Y., 5, 86,  
 Yelverton Family of Norfolk, Eng., 37, 38,  
 Ysselstein, Holland, 78,  
 Young, Abigail, 12, 68, 204,  
 John, 196,  
 Ruth, 19,



















